

Chapter 201

“My good younger sister, why are you so sweet today?” Darryl said as he laughed. He asked, “What can I help you with?”

Megan bit her lip and whispered, “Have...have you heard of the Eternal Life Palace sect?”

Eternal Life Palace? The grandfather and granddaughter at the auction just now were from this sect. They were one of the two main cults.

“Yes, I’ve just heard of it. What happened?” Darryl asked.

“I need you to help me investigate it,” Megan replied softly.

Donghai City was in chaos recently. A few days ago, the Grandmaster Heaven cult set up a branch here, followed by the Eternal Life Palace. With the two huge cults setting up their presence here in Donghai City, this city would soon be going to the dogs.

Thank goodness the Grandmaster Heaven had simmered down recently. Hall Master Skyler Burr has not been seen for many days now.

Unfortunately, the Eternal Life Palace sect has been

stepping out of bounds. After setting up a branch, they have been doing all sorts of evil and outrageous acts like using humans to refine elixirs!

The leaders of the police ordered, if they could not get rid of the Eternal Life Palace in a month, everyone would be laid off.

The police have been busy investigating them ever since, but they could not even locate a branch of the sect.

Darryl smiled warily, he said, "If the police can't make any progress, what good could I do?"

Megan was a little anxious, she replied, "We caught a member of the Eternal Life Palace sect yesterday, his name is Chester Wilson. We believe that he is of a high rank in the cult. Unfortunately, no matter how we interrogated him, he kept his mouth shut. So in the end we could do nothing but lock him up in prison."

Megan took a sip of her coffee, then continued, "I've thought about sending someone into prison to get close to Chester and see what we can extract out from him, so I thought of you!"

What? Undercover in prison? What Megan meant was that he had to gain Chester's trust as a prisoner? Was that a joke?

Darryl almost stood up, he shook his head furiously

and said, “No, no, you think too highly of me. Asking me to go undercover? I’d rather fight him. Furthermore, you have so many officers below you, why don’t you pick one of them instead of me?”

Life was good outside, why should he suffer in prison? The idea spoke of madness!

Megan, as anxious as Darryl, gritted her teeth and pleaded, “Please, my good brother, I beg of you as a good younger sister, just help me this once, please?”

Megan did not understand why she had set her eyes on Darryl. Since the start of this plan, the first person that came to mind was Darryl. Previously, Darryl took on tens of grave robbers alone. At the bank, he fought off the robbers alone as well, shielding a student from a gunshot, and rescued a girl from a hostage situation. He caught a shark in the sea, and handled a robbery on the bus—who could compare with him in terms of bravery, intelligence, or reflexes?

“Alright, alright! I will help you this one time! Don’t ask me for favors like this the next time,” Darryl agreed reluctantly.

He thought he would have a date with a pretty officer, who knew it would turn out this way!

“Yes!” Megan nodded cheerfully.

Darryl asked cheekily, “What do I get in return then?”

The mission was not easy at all—he had to get close to a member of the Eternal Life Palace sect! At the auction, the young girl’s token was enough to scare Zack Roger half to death, which showed how powerful and terrifying the Eternal Life Palace sect was.

Megan laughed and replied, “I’ve prepared ten million as a reward, as long as you accomplish the mission, the ten million is yours, how about that?”

In Megan’s eyes—though Darryl is a nice person—he was only a live-in son-in-law, he should be in need of money.

Darryl shook his head, the amount did not motivate him one bit. He said, “You want me to risk my life for a mere ten million?”

Megan looked down and bit her lip. She thought for a while, then said, “My good brother, the ten million did not come easily, I had to fight for it. How about this, if you agree to help me and if you succeed, I’ll do anything...”

Looking at her blushing, Darryl laughed, he asked cheekily, “Anything?”

Megan nodded immediately, but then she saw

Darryl's sly expression, she quickly added, "Of course, nothing too inappropriate!"

"Ok! What do I have to do to get myself in prison?" asked Darryl.

Megan laughed, "Oh my good brother, I've arranged everything. Only both of us know about you being undercover, no one else. So we have to act like it as well! I need you to steal a couple of phones next door, my colleagues will be here soon to arrest you."

...What?

Chapter 202

'F*ck, I've never stolen anything before,' thought Darryl solemnly.

"Why theft? Thievery is so degrading!" Darryl said sharply. Truth be told, ever since he was young, Darryl despised petty thieves. You have a set of hands and legs, why take something that was not yours?

Megan looked at Darryl defenselessly, she replied, "Do you have any better ideas?"

Darryl smiled slyly, he sized Megan up and said, "How about me attacking a policewoman, or even touching her inappropriately..."

Megan blushed, she glared at Darryl and said, "I'm being serious!"

"Fine, I'll stop with the jokes. Let me think of another way. I want to enter prison with dignity. I heard that the inmates all look down on thieves," said Darryl seriously.

Megan nodded. "What other ways then?" she asked.

Darryl offered a few suggestions such as beating someone up or a hit and run. Megan rebuffed all of

those. In the end, he could only reluctantly agree to steal.

Darryl then texted Pearl a message, instructing her to manage the company on his behalf, as he would not be around for some time. He also gave Pearl his account and password to Longya Live Streaming Platform, instructing Pearl to look after Lily through it as well.

When he finished, he begrudgingly got up and headed to the Apple Store next door.

“Someone is stealing phones!”

“Quick..quick catch him! Thief!”

A few seconds later, Darryl rushed out of the store with two new phones in his hands. A few store employees chased after him.

That caused quite a commotion, everyone was looking at Darryl, yet no one wanted to get involved. Soon, a few policemen caught Darryl, arrested him to the floor, and escorted him away in a police car. This entire scene lasted no longer than five minutes.

Megan could not help but laugh out loud in the cafe. Who knew that Darryl had a knack for acting? He gave the performance of a lifetime stealing those phones. She hoped that once he entered prison, he

would be able to get some info out of Chester Wilson. With that, she left the cafe.

Darryl was immediately sent to prison. He was ordered to change into the prison uniform. He could see that the inmates were having their free time now. A few huge blokes were playing basketball. Nine out of ten of them had tattoos and scars all over their bodies.

...

Donghai City First Hospital.

First-class ward. Daniel Darby has been recuperating. He could finally sit up and was feeling energetic.

Shelly came to visit the couple, bringing along freshly cut apples for them.

A few policemen pushed open the door. The leader among them asked, "Are you the parents of Darryl Darby?" He handed them a file with a professional smile.

Daniel and Luna were slightly confused as to why the policemen were here.

Shelly approached them and answered on their behalf, "Yes, there are. May I know what's the matter?"

The officer nodded, then replied, "Your son was

caught stealing phones from the Apple Store. He was apprehended by us. We've come to inform you, that's all."

What? Shelly thought this was a joke. How could Brother Darryl steal? This must be a huge prank.

"You must have gotten the wrong person, Brother Darryl would never steal!" Shelly exclaimed.

The police asked, "Are you his younger sister?"

"No...no I'm not." Shelly blushed.

Chapter 203

“I’m not his sister but I know him well. He would never do such a thing!” Shelly said gently.

“But the facts are facts. He did commit theft,” said the police. He turned to Darryl’s parents and said, “Your son really did steal some phones.”

The undercover action was highly secretive, no other person should know about this. Hence, according to their standard operating procedures, they needed to inform family members.

Luna tensed as she said in disbelief, “Darryl stealing phones? Impossible. He is the president of a corporation and is highly successful. Why would he do such a thing? This has to be a mistake.”

Daniel—on the bed—was flustered. He chimed in, “Yes! This must be a mistake. Darryl despised thieves ever since he was young. Why would he become one?”

The police handed them the file and said professionally, “That I wouldn’t know, but if you think we got the wrong person, please have a look at the file.”

Luna and Daniel were floored when they saw the

photo of Darryl wearing an inmate uniform.

...

The Lyndons.

Lily was in the living room, she wore a demure long dress, seated in front of her computer, singing on her live stream. She looked exceptionally charming.

Samantha smiled widely as she accompanied Lily. Lily has garnered many views on her live stream platform recently. She started off with a few hundred fans and in just a mere few days, the number increased to a few hundred thousand! The speed of growth in viewers was a first for the live streaming platform.

Just now, Lily's mysterious fan Hill appeared. He sent her 'gifts' worth a few hundred thousand that caused Lily's live stream to become so popular, it appeared on the main page of the app.

Lily was extremely excited, she wanted to thank that person. Sadly, every time he finished sending 'gifts', he would go offline immediately.

"Lily, it looks like you've got a fan that loves you very much. He must be the boss of a huge company. You must maintain a good relationship with him," Samantha said joyfully.

Lily nodded, if it weren't for Hill, she would not

have earned so much money.

“One more thing, I realized that even though you have not appeared on your live stream for a few days, you are still equally popular. Longya Live Stream Platform keeps on recommending you as well, why?” asked Samantha.

Lily replied cheerily, “I guess it’s because I’m pretty?”

Both of them chuckled. Samantha added, “It must be! My daughter is the prettiest.”

RING!

At that moment, Lily’s phone rang. Looking at the caller number, Samantha and Lily looked at each other in bewilderment.

110? Emergency number? It must be a scam call.

“It must be a scammer! Let’s see what I’ll do to this caller,” Samantha said, then answered the call on loudspeaker.

“Hello, is this Ms. Lily Lyndon? I’m calling from the City Police.” A man’s voice came through.

They knew her name! Looks like was not a scam after all.

“I am, what is the matter?” Lily answered.

“Your husband Darryl Darby has been arrested for

his crimes,” the police officer explained clearly.

What?

Lily trembled, she asked anxiously, “What did he do?”

“He stole two iPhones. When he was apprehended, Darryl confessed immediately and was forgiven by the store owner. However, he has been sentenced to two months of jail time for his crime. As his wife, we have an obligation to inform you,” explained the police officer, then he hung up.

Samantha could not help but laugh. She said, “Lily, look at this loser! See what he’s done now! Stealing iPhones? Such a disgrace! A man like him has fully functioning limbs yet he steals? I tell you, leaving him was the greatest decision you’ve ever made.”

“But...” Lily bit her lip. She could not believe that Darryl would do such a thing. However, it was the police that called, how could it be fake then?

Chapter 204

Prison.

The inmates have three periods of free time daily, all of them after meals. There were a few huge blokes playing basketball on the court. Though mediocre at it, they were equally excited just to be playing.

Those who were not playing basketball would cheer them on at the side. Except for one person. He would sit by the court, and be engrossed in reading.

He looked like he was in his thirties or forties. With his hair parted down the middle, he was as geeky could be.

When Darryl came in, he was immediately interested in this person due to the fact that he chose to read instead of taking part in other activities during his free time. Darryl secretly took a peek at the photo that Megan gave him of Chester, turns out that the guy reading was his target!

That cannot be true, the person that Megan described is a high ranking member of the Eternal Life Palace sect, he should look extremely powerful. Whereas the guy in front of him had a weak aura,

perhaps only a Level One Master?

Furthermore, this Chester Wilson guy looked geeky and weak! The book he was reading was...what?!

Sun Tzu's Art of War?! Who reads Sun Tzu's Art of War in prison?

Darryl thought that was funny, as he contemplated on how best to approach him, a ball hit Chester's head.

BAM!

This hit almost made Chester pass out. The book and his specs flew off.

"Oh no, I'm so sorry, the ball slipped from my hand," said a huge guy sarcastically.

The huge guy looked familiar to Darryl. Could it be... Trent Young?! Darryl almost laughed out loud. The person was Trent Young! He took advantage of Lily the last time, so he got a beating from Darryl. Trent then got convicted for causing trouble and was sent to prison.

'Haha! He's still not out yet?!' thought Darryl amusingly.

Even though Trent Young was the owner of a Martial Club, he was pretentious and liked to hurt others. He was not a stranger to prison.

The prison was a dog eat dog world where the

strong preyed on the weak—you might be rich or powerful yet you still had to follow its rules when you were jailed. However, Trent Young was an exception because he could fight. He garnered quite a number of followers, so he was extremely arrogant in prison.

At that moment, Trent had not noticed Darryl. He only had Chester in his eyes—that nerd has been in prison for a few days yet he still did not know the rules! How dare he not kowtow to Trent, the prison gang leader. Acting all high and mighty, pretending as if he was a master?

Seeing Chester read by the basketball court made Trent fume with rage. How dare he treat the basketball court like a library? Hence Trent threw the ball at Chester out of spite.

Chester saw gold stars. He crouched on the floor looking for his glasses. Just as he found them, Trent picked up the ball and threw it at him again.

BAM!

The ball hit Chester squarely in the face.

Chester stood up and said coldly, “What’s your problem?” He fumed with rage. Though a high-rank member in the Eternal Life Palace sect, he was, unfortunately, caught and thrown into prison. How was it possible that he was being bullied by an

ordinary person? He just wanted to spend his time in prison reading.

“What’s my problem? Are you blind? Can’t you see that I am playing basketball? Seeing you reading here really affected my vibes,” Trent said unreasonably.

He then looked at the book on the floor and sneered, “My, my, Sun Tzu’s Art of War. Looks like someone is educated. What are you going to do with it? Lead an army into war? We are now living in a high tech era. This book is way out of date, idiot.”

Trent pointed to the ball and said coldly, “Pick the ball up, then take your book and f*ck off!”

Chester was furious, but he dared not say a word.

Chapter 205

“Are you deaf? Didn’t you hear what our leader said? Pick up the bloody ball! You hear me?”

“How dare you glare at Trent! Are you looking for trouble?”

A few of Trent’s followers glared threateningly at Chester, ready to attack him at a moment’s notice.

Upon witnessing the scene, Darryl let out a cold laugh. He could no longer take it that those people are so openly bullying Chester. Chester did nothing wrong.

Trent turned around and met Darryl’s eyes. He was shocked, then he fumed with rage, “Motherf*cker, it’s you?! Why do I keep seeing you!” He rushed forward to fight Darryl. Bloody hell, it was because of Darryl that he ended up in prison. Now that he met him here, he was going to kill him!

He was about to hit Darryl when he stopped abruptly.

‘F*ck, what is happening? Wasn’t he only a Level Two Master previously? How has he leveled up to Level Four Master in such a short time? I can’t beat him alone,’ thought Trent.

He waved his hands to his followers and commanded, “Brothers, let’s beat him up together!”

A few men surrounded Darryl. In prison, they were Trent’s followers. Whatever Trent said, they followed without question.

Darryl calmly said, “I just came in, I do not want to cause trouble, please don’t force my hand.”

At that moment, Chester picked up his specs and book. He stood there and looked at Darryl. How was this man still so calm despite being outnumbered. He must be a strong man!

Darryl noticed Chester’s gaze but did not react. Megan had warned him that Chester was sly and very perceptive. To not cause suspicion, Darryl could not show off his mastery.

At the same time, a prison guard approached them and screamed, “What are you all doing? Do you want to extend your punishment here?”

Darryl’s eyes sparkled when he saw that the prison guard was a female. She was pretty good looking.

“Officer, we were not fighting, haha! We were only fooling around!” Trent laughed.

In prison, no one dares to be too presumptuous.

The officer glared at them, turned around, and left. She muttered, “Don’t bully the newcomer.” She knew that this new inmate, Darryl, was a thief. Thieves were looked down upon in prison. That Darryl would definitely be bullied, especially by Trent and his followers. ‘He is going to have a bad time here.’ she sighed.

“Brother Trent, what are we going to do with that Darryl?” a follower asked during lunch.

Trent replied coldly, “Don’t worry. We will defeat Darryl through Chester. If Darryl sees Chester being bullied, he won’t be so arrogant anymore!”

“This is a good idea!”

“Trent you are amazing!” The followers looked up to Trent a lot. Whatever he did was perfect in their eyes.

After lunch, during a toilet break. Darryl and Chester were peeing, when Trent came with his men. They surrounded Chester and peed on his pants, it was extremely disgusting.

Chester was exceedingly enraged, but he held back. Sadly, this was not the end of it.

During dinner, when Trent passed by Chester, he stopped and spit in Chester’s food. All the inmates witnessed this.

Food in prison was extremely precious. If you did not eat, you would starve.

Chapter 206

Chester's face twitched intensely. He could take it no longer. He stood up, glared at Trent with bloodshot eyes, and said, "We all live under the same roof, what's the matter with you?!"

He had never suffered like this at the Eternal Life Palace sect, who would dare bully a high-rank member like him?

"Wow, the nerd is angry, and I dare say a little snobbish!" Trent jeered.

Then he slapped Chester across the face.

Slap!

It was not too big a hit, but everyone heard it.

Chester clenched his fist. He stayed silent for almost a minute, then with murderous intent said, "When I leave this place, I will kill your entire family." He swept Trent and his men with his deadly glare.

Everyone gasped. This nerdy weakling's threats were actually terrifying.

Trent came to his senses, spat on the floor, and said, "Bloody f*ck, are you threatening me? You b*

stard!”

He rushed forward and was about to hit Chester when the female prison guard stopped him. Then, he decided to leave things be. Until midnight.

It was bedtime, and the lights were off. Darryl was about to sleep when he heard footsteps. He opened his eyes slowly—he saw Trent and his men headed toward Chester’s bed, and in their hands were thick hemp ropes. They were going to kill him.

Indeed, what the nerd said this afternoon was a little frightening, as it seemed like he was not joking. A nerdy guy like him, being able to throw threats like those made Trent worried. Thus he decided to get rid of him once and for all. Fighting in prison was a norm since there was no one to keep the order.

Trent pounced at Chester. Choking him with the rope, he said, “F*cker, weren’t you great at threatening? I’d like to see how you do that now! I’m going to kill you first!”

Chester was gasping for air, face flushed. He struggled to move as Trent was stronger than him. If it went on any longer, he would have died within a minute!

Darryl smiled to himself on the bed, he waited for a while before rescuing Chester. He counted to 45,

then stood up lazily.

“Please keep your voices down, people are sleeping,” Darryl said with a smile.

Chester’s eyes were already rolled over, showing only the whites.

“Darryl, f*ck off, this has nothing to do with you,” Trent threatened.

Darryl shook his head, he said, “Guys, you have been bullying him the entire day, yet you still don’t want to give it a rest? I can’t take it any longer.”

Darryl then served two punches.

BAM! BAM!

The two simple punches hit two huge men, both passed out.

F*ck? How is he so powerful?

Trent—not paying attention to Chester anymore—ordered, “Get him! He’s only one guy, what are you all waiting for! Go!”

The group of men rushed forward.

Darryl smiled calmly, then rushed to meet them as well. His punches were like cannonballs. Within half a minute, the group of them were on the floor, howling in pain.

“Darryl, you...you...” Trent said as his sweat flowed profusely. His face was bruised. How did this live-in son-in-law get so powerful in a few days? He was only a Level Two Master previously, now he was a Level Four Master?!

Upon hearing the commotion, the female guard came to the scene at once. She was stunned. Trent was defeated? She rubbed her eyes to make sure she was not hallucinating. Trent was a martial arts champion, no one dared to offend him here. How could he have been beaten up so badly?

The prison guard looked at Darryl with disbelief! This person was no ordinary thief!

“I dare you to be a prick one more time, I’ll beat you up every single time I see you,” Darryl walked toward Trent and kicked him.

Chapter 207

Trent howled in pain as he nodded in defeat and said, “Understood, I fully understood!”

‘Bloody hell, I’m not stupid. That Darryl just got lucky that he leveled up so quickly. When I get out of here, I’m going to myself some Elixirs, you watch out then!’ thought Trent.

The prison guard came to her senses, she took one more look at Darryl, and said softly, “Alright, it’s late. Everyone go back to bed! Do go looking for trouble!” Then she left.

Chester could finally breathe. He got up and walked to Darryl. He cupped his fist in salutation and said gratefully, “Thank you for saving my life! I am forever in your debt!”

‘Haha! He talks in such a polite, studious way! This person is quite interesting!’ thought Darryl.

He waved his hands and replied, “It’s nothing, I just can’t stand bullies.” Then he went back to bed casually. Darryl did not want to make the first move as this was the only way he could wipe out any potential suspicion from Chester.

He was right.

Seeing Darryl's nonchalance, Chester wanted to know more about him, "Brother, are you from Donghai City as well?" Chester asked as he sat on the side of the bed.

He took the bait!

Darryl was extremely excited but hid it well. He sat up and continued chatting with Chester. Upon chatting with him, Darryl realized that Chester was indeed a very educated person, that there was nothing he did not know. He could talk about any subject which was admirable.

Of course, when Chester asked Darryl about himself, Darryl only said that he was a live-in son-in-law. Chester did not question that, nor did he look down on Darryl.

...

One week later, the Darbys.

The entire clan was gathered in the main hall. Old master Drake ordered this meeting, citing that he has urgent matters to discuss. They were all discussing, wondering what the matter could be.

Drake entered the hall slowly. He broke the silence and said, "There are two things that need to be discussed." Drake took a seat and scanned his surroundings.

He continued solemnly, “First, I have decided that the entire Darby clan start cultivating.”

Everyone gasped in excitement! If they started cultivating, they could become strong and powerful! That was everyone’s dream!

Drake waved to command their attention, he said sternly, “Please be quiet! The second thing is, the Darbys will become members of the Eternal Life Palace sect starting from now on. But this must be kept a secret within our family. Is that clear?”

What? Joining the Eternal Life Palace sect?

Everyone was speechless. The Eternal Life Palace was one of the two huge cults! They only committed evil! If the Darbys were members, did that mean that they were a force of evil from now on? Why would Old Master Darby do such a thing?

“Grandpa, the Eternal Life Palace sect is a cult,” someone finally blurted. The rest nodded in agreement.

Drake took a long deep breath. He did not know whether the decision that he made was right or wrong. What he knew was that if they did not get stronger, they would have no standing whatsoever. The Dax Sanders incident was a lesson learned.

“Are you all questioning Grandpa’s decision?” Yumi

stood up and stomped her heels. She said loudly, “So you all have become powerful and dare to question him now?”

Cultivating will not only make one stronger, but it would make you stay younger for a long time. Yumi did not care if she had to join the Eternal Life Palace sect, as long as she knew she could stay beautiful for a long time thanks to cultivating.

Florian supported his wife, he nodded, and said, “Yes. Grandpa has worked hard for us his entire life. I support his decision.”

“I support him too!” chimed in Jackson. He was really eager to practice cultivating. The first thing that he would do once he became stronger was revenge—he wanted to tie Lily up and make her have his babies.

Chapter 208

As long as someone took the lead, everyone would follow—so it was not surprising that soon the entire Darby clan agreed to join the Eternal Life Palace sect.

Old Master Drake nodded in relief then dismissed them, he said, “Ok, there are no other matters, you may leave. Please keep in mind what I just said—no one can know that the Darbys joined the Eternal Life Palace.

When everyone left, a silhouette of a person with a powerful aura stood at the main hall entrance—Brian Cunningham.

“So, what’s your decision?” Brian approached Drake.

Drake nodded, and said, “I agree to your conditions, that the Darbys join the Eternal Life Palace sect.”

“Wonderful! This is great news!” Brian cheered.

“From now on we are on the same boat! I’ll get my men to send the Spiritual Elixir over soon,” he added.

Brian handed a manual to Drake, he said, “We’re old

friends, please accept this small gift as a welcome gift to the Eternal Life Palace sect!”

Drake’s hand trembled when he saw the manual, it was The Big Dipper Formation, the ultimate secret manual of the Wudang sect!

“The Big Dipper Formation?” Drake asked.

Brian laughed, he said, “Yes! When I left the Wudang sect, I stole it. This formation is a powerful one, but it needs seven people!”

“Long time ago, there were seven Masters of the Wudang sect, they used this formation to trap a Grandmaster Heaven Master Marquis to death!” Brian explained.

How was the formation so powerful? Seven Masters could kill a Master Marquis? The Master Marquis ranking was two levels above Master!

Drake was immensely excited when he heard this! With this manual, no one would dare cause any trouble with the Darbys from now on!

“I hope you would be happy with this! This is just the start, when you join the Eternal Life Palace sect, as long as we work in tandem, there will be many good things to follow!” Brian chuckled, as he patted Drake on the arm.

Drake nodded excitedly, while he poured the tea.

...

For the past few days, the variety show “101 Superstar” had garnered views from all over the country.

With Platinum Corporation’s help, Lana Thomas successfully entered the finals after a few rounds of intense competition. She and eight other finalists formed a girl group called “S9”, “S” being short for “Super”.

Of course, since Darryl was not around, the entire operation of Platinum Corporation fell on Pearl to manage.

While promoting Lana Thomas, Pearl has not forgotten about the live stream as well. During that period, Pearl would sign in as Hill to support Lily’s live stream. She would send ‘gifts’ worth a few hundred thousands or more, sometimes even up to millions to Lily. Once she had done that, Pearl would sign out immediately. Hence, Hill was not only Lily’s number one fan, but he was also the entire Longya Live Stream Platform’s most mysterious patron.

All who used Longya Live Stream would know about Hill, and they would tune in daily to see him interact with Lily. That also indirectly caused Lily’s live stream to grow in popularity. From a mere ten

thousand, it grew to a million or more fans. Those who flocked to her live stream not only want to hear her sing, but they were curious to see how much the legendary Hill would spend on Lily.

Present time. Lyndons.

Lily just ended her live stream and was in a cheery mood. Hill gave her a five million 'gift' today so she wanted to thank him in person.

"Lily, you've just ended your stream?" asked Samantha, as she came downstairs. All the while her daughter made a lot of money, which made her exceptionally happy. Her daughter was beautiful, talented, and has the earning power—anyone would be happy for her as well.

"Mother, I would like to buy a house. Our current house is too small. I want to buy a bigger one. I would be more comfortable doing my live stream too," Lily said. As she gained in popularity, it is not too appropriate to constantly live stream in the living room. Furthermore, what if guests visited them? It would be extremely awkward, seeing that she was a famous person now.

"Sure sure, let's get something you like. It's good to move as well. When that loser Darryl is released from prison, he will not be able to find us. This saves us the trouble of him begging you to come

back to him.” Samanta nodded with a smile.

My daughter earns a few million per day, buying a house means nothing, she could afford any house that she likes!

Chapter 209

“Lily, now that you’re earning so much, let’s get a house that you like! I heard that Jade’s Windon Real Estate has recently developed some high-end luxury villas. I saw the advertisement on the tv last night, it was breathtaking!” Samantha said.

Lily’s eye sparkled.

Yes, indeed, she had heard that Windon Real Estate recently developed one of Donghai City’s most luxurious villas at the highest-rated scene area. She also heard that the price was pretty steep as well, buying a villa there would cost twice as much as anywhere else.

However, she was not short on money recently, she could definitely afford it.

She picked up her phone and dialed Jade. The moment Jade picked up, she asked, “Jade, the villa up on the hill, do you still have it? I want to buy one.”

“Yeah there are still some units available, why don’t you come by and take a look! Unfortunately, I’m currently busy so I don’t think I could accompany you. If you want to have a look, I’ll get someone to

serve you!” Jade laughed.

The two best friends chatted for a while, then hung up.

The next day, Lily and Samantha headed over to the villas. Windon Villas, named as Donghai City’s best villas. The surroundings were great—there was a private pool and even a public golf course. Any member of the upper-class society of Donghai City would want to live there.

There was a stream of people coming in and out to view the villas.

When Samantha and Lily arrived, it was already noon.

One of the staff led them to one of the villas. Suddenly, a taxi came from afar. This got everyone’s attention. Usually, those who came to view the villas came in luxurious, expensive cars, not some cheap taxi.

The car came to a halt, and a middle-aged couple came down. It was Darryl’s parents!

A week ago, Darryl left instructions to reserve the best villa for his parents. When his dad had been discharged, they would live there.

“My, my, isn’t that the petty thief’s parents?”
Samantha smiled sneeringly and approached them.

She was surprised to see them here. How could people like them afford the villas here?

“Mother, stop...” Lily tried to stop Samantha, but Samantha did not hear her.

Seeing the mother-daughter duo approaching them, Daniel Darby grimaced. He was in a pretty good mood—planning on seeing their future house—but it went up in smoke the moment he heard Samantha’s voice.

“It’s such a coincidence to see you two here,” Samantha said, trying to hold back her laughter. She added, “Are you here to buy a house too?”

Daniel Darby replied coldly, “Yes.”

“Wow, do you know how much a villa here cost? I’m afraid even if you starve for a lifetime, your family still won’t be able to afford one here.” Samantha said sarcastically.

She smacked her forehead in feigned surprise and said, “I almost forgot! Your son steals phones for a living, I guess if he stole two per day for ten years, you’d probably have a chance of buying the villa!”

“You!” Daniel was fuming with rage. His face flushed, he said, “How dare you say that about my son, he is not that type of person!”

Darryl was innocent, being caught stealing phones,

there must be a reason behind it! The two Darbys strongly believed that they brought up their son well. Darryl would never do something like that!

Samantha laughed coldly, “He’s already in prison, yet you still can’t face the truth?”

“Mother, stop talking. They’re still my parents-in-law...” Lily pleaded softly.

“No! I want to! Darryl was convicted of the crime and locked up in prison! Do you know how embarrassing that is? Why do you still have hopes for him? When he is released, I want you two to get a marriage certificate! I’m done letting this loser live in our house for free.” Samantha said angrily.

Daniel was extremely enraged upon hearing Samantha’s words. How can someone so beautiful like her be so unreasonable?

However, Daniel held back. He ignored her and said to Luna, “Let’s go see our house.”

Luna nodded and they walked together to the first villa. Darryl arranged for them to stay in the first villa in the front row. This was the villa with the best view of the bay, and it was convenient to get around as well. The feng shui was of the highest grade.

Samantha snickered, “Darryl’s parents are funny

people. They're from the countryside, they can't even afford the cheapest villa here, yet they picked the best one to view?"

As she finished speaking, she was struck dumb. She saw Daniel fish out a key, open the door, and enter.

Why would he have a key? Unless the villa has been bought by them?

When she came to her senses, Samantha nudged the staff and asked, "What's happening now, how can you give the key of the villa to anyone to view?"

Chapter 210

The Darbys were from the countryside, how could they have so much money that they could afford to even consider viewing the best villa of all?

The staff replied with a smile, "Ma'am, this villa was already bought a week ago. It was processed internally, I don't know the details."

Internally?

Samantha was unhappy, she said, "I'll pay more, can you do something about it? I want this villa."

The location of this villa was extremely well, the price of it will definitely increase in the future. Now that her daughter could afford it from her live stream earnings, what harm could adding a little more money do to get the best villa?

"I'm sorry, I don't make the decisions." the staff apologized.

Samantha was gloomy, she turned to Lily and said, "Call Jade, she's the president, we want this villa, I've asked her to do something about it."

...

Prison.

Everywhere Darryl went, there would be a stream of followers. After beating Trent up yesterday, those followers turned to him instead.

Darryl got closer to Chester, to the point of talking about everything under the sun.

Of course, none of them have revealed their true identities yet. Today was the last day Chester would be in prison. Due to insufficient evidence, the police had no choice but to let him go.

Before leaving, Chester wrote his number on a piece of paper and gave it to Darryl. He hugged Darryl and said, "Brother, I'll leave first. When you leave prison, please contact me! Keep in touch!"

"Definitely!" Darryl smiled. He had been waiting for Chester to say this after he made such an effort to get closer to him.

Chester said no more, he patted Darryl's shoulder and left.

The next day, Darryl was released as well. At the prison gates, Megan called, "My good brother, how ..."

She stopped abruptly. What is the matter with her? Why does she keep calling him my good brother? She was extremely embarrassed.

"Darryl, what info did you get out of Chester?" she

asked after calming herself down.

For almost two weeks, Megan was sure that there would be results. If she had any info, she would be in for a reward!

Darryl smiled bitterly, he said, “It’s not as easy as you think. Chester is very alert. During this time, our relationship has gotten closer. However, every time I try to ask about his identity, he changes the topic.”

Darryl stated the truth. Chester was good at the skill of conversing, always staying cautious in what he says.

“What? How could that be? So it was all for nothing?” Megan said disappointedly.

Darryl was actually teasing her—it was not all for nothing, he managed to get Chester’s contact.

Megan thought Darryl was being serious. Darryl continued teasing, he said, “Yeah, it was all because of you that I was in prison for half a month, doing nothing. Say, what do I get in return?”

“You get nothing! You didn’t even accomplish the mission!” Megan grunted.

“Well, then it’s fine. If I ever have any news about the Eternal Life Palace, I won’t let you know,” Darryl chuckled.

Megan replied curtly, “Even the police can’t investigate them, how could you? You did not manage to get any info on the Eternal Life Palace this time being undercover, you think you'd be able to do it the next time?”

Megan continued, “I even called you my good brother to coax you to go undercover, it was all for nothing! I should not have called you my good brother. You are my useless good younger brother, useless good younger brother!” then she hung up the phone.

‘Bloody hell, she’s so practical! Just because I did not accomplish the mission, I am her useless younger brother.’ Darryl was struck dumb.

He hailed a taxi to head back to the office.

After half a month in prison, he wondered how the corporation was doing. Being released from prison, seeing traffic, Darryl sighed. ‘It’s good to be out, the air is fresher,’ he thought.

He was about to enter the taxi when his phone rang —it was Chester!

Chapter 211

Darryl took a deep breath to calm himself down. That Chester Wilson really had the nerve to obtain the news of him getting released.

He picked up the phone and heard Chester's laugh.

"Haha! Bro, I heard that you left prison today. I've prepared a feast for you to wash away your bad luck! You're not going to refuse, are you?"

He spoke in his usual unpolished tone, sounding chipper.

"Brother Chester, you're indeed well-informed," Darryl laughed in response. "Yeah, sure. Where are you?"

"I'm alright. I can get any information I'm after. I'm at Blue Phoenix KTV right now."

Chester hung up the call as soon as he finished.

Blue Phoenix KTV was an entertainment center that opened two months ago. It was located on the busiest road in Donghai City. It was exceptionally upscale, with many luxury cars parked near its entrance.

The people there were either rich men or pretty

ladies.

Two young usherettes greeted Darryl as he rushed to the entrance.

“Excuse me, are you Mister Darby?” One of the usherettes asked courteously

“Yes.”

“Hello, Mr. Darby. Brother Chester is waiting for you upstairs. Please follow me.” The usherette took Darryl to the first floor as she spoke.

The KTV looked polished with its grand interior. Darryl figured that it was one of the best KTVs in Donghai City.

They reached a luxurious private room on the first floor. The pretty usherette politely gestured for him to enter before retreating to the side.

Gasp!

Darryl took in a sharp intake of breath when he looked into the private room!

Hundreds of men were standing in the spacious room. All of them were cultivators as they were wearing all black!

Although they seemed to be Level One Masters with a fair amount of strength, it was still a shocking scene to see hundreds of them together!

A gentle-looking scholar sat amid the hundreds of men. It was Chester!

‘What the f*ck?’ Darryl walked into the room slowly in shock.

The hundreds of brawny men took a 90-degree bow all at once and greeted, “Hall Master!”

What? Hall Master?

Darryl was dumbfounded. He stared at Chester in a daze.

“What is happening?”

“Hahaha!” Chester burst into laughter. “Darryl, starting from today, you are the new Hall Master of Eternal Life Palace Sect, Donghai City division!”

Chester wore a long robe with a folding fan in his hand. It was no ordinary fan; it was an item worth millions of bucks from a palace during the Qing Dynasty.

“I’ll be frank, I am a member of the Eternal Life Palace Sect,” he chuckled. “Darryl, you must have heard about it, right?”

“Eternal Life Palace Sect?”

Darryl feigned surprise.

Chester nodded and continued, “I am the White-

Fanned Military Adviser under the Sect Master. My position is right under the Sect Master but above thousands of others. Everyone in the sect greets me as Master Wilson out of respect, other than the Sect Master.”

Chester’s face was filled with pride as he talked.

‘What the f*ck! A military adviser?’

His position was indeed shocking for Darryl.

Eternal Life Palace Sect had almost a million disciples; his position was remarkably high!

He remembered Megan warning him that Chester was someone important in the Eternal Life Palace Sect, but he did not expect him to be this high in position!

‘Damn, that’s huge news!’

Chester slipped an arm around Darryl’s shoulder and said in a serious tone, “Bro, here’s something personal. There are only three types of people in my view. First, there are strangers. Second, my subordinates, and the third, my parents, along with the Sect Master.”

“However, there is now a new type. It’s you, bro! You are my only brother.”

“Darryl, it is a lifetime honor for me to meet a

brother like you,” he smiled. “The Eternal Life Palace had set up a hall in Donghai City, so I have decided to choose you as the Hall Master.”

There was no room for doubt in his tone!

“Is this alright?” Darryl mumbled.

Chester appointed him as the Hall Master for the Eternal Life Palace Sect, although he was the Grandmaster Heaven Cult’s Hall Master.

F*ck.

Chapter 212

The world was unpredictable. Life was indeed a box of chocolates. However, Darryl could not really fathom the surprises.

Being the Hall Master for both the infamous cults would be a little...

“Why not?” exclaimed Chester. “I am the brain behind the plan to set up a hall in Donghai City, so I have the final say in who is the Hall Master, and I’m saying that you are!”

Chester laughed again, “According to our customs, someone with the position of a Hall Master has to greet me—the military adviser. I’ll let you off the hook since you’re my bro! Hahaha!”

F*ck, he made his decision. He would not budge!

Darryl was speechless, but he maintained a smile.

“By the way, this is the authenticating object for you as the Hall Master. Keep it well.” Chester took out a silver token and placed it in Darryl’s hand.

A token?

Darryl accepted the silver token and flipped it. The token made from pure silver had a wolf engraved on

it. The craftsmanship looked delicate and vivid.

He could not help but think about the auction when he looked at the token.

Both the old man and his granddaughter had a golden token.

Zack Roger told him that those with a golden token had a superior position in the Eternal Life Palace Sect.

Darryl asked out of curiosity, “Brother Chester, can I have a look at your token?”

Chester took out his token smilingly.

A platinum token?

A glint of surprise flashed past Darryl’s eyes as he observed the token engraved with a qilin, a mythological beast.

Chester explained, “As the master of the Eternal Life Palace Sect, the Sect Master possesses a jade token. Whereas me, a military adviser, has a platinum one.”

“The next in rank is the Four Guardian Kings. They have golden tokens. Hall Masters have silver tokens. Finally, ordinary disciples have bronze ones.”

Oh sh*t.

The old man from the auction was one of the Four

Guardian Kings of the Eternal Life Palace Sect. It was no wonder that he was so powerful!

Chester took the platinum token back from him and smiled. “Darryl, I prepared another huge gift for you aside from this one!”

He raised his hands and clapped.

The private room’s door flung open, and around 20 women were brought in instantly.

Damn!

All the women had a decent appearance with great figures. They were all tied up.

All of them had a voluptuous and curvy figure!

The women were forcefully pushed to get down on their knees.

“Bro, I’ve put a lot of effort into this arrangement. I spent the whole night capturing these women from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult!” Chester laughed as he smoked on his pipe. “Do you like it?”

‘These women are from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult?’

Grandmaster Heaven Cult and Eternal Life Palace Sect were the two most infamous cults. Since Chester had caught these women from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult, the two cults’

relationship was not great.

Chester continued smoking, “Hahaha! Bro, I made a reservation at the Oriental Pearl for you. Enjoy it! We’re leaving, so look for us when you’re done!”

Chester waved an arm to gesture everyone to leave the private room.

“Hall Master, we’re taking our leave!” greeted the bulky men before walking to the door and bowed again; their movements neat and uniform. It was quite a scene! It was clear that they practiced well. They left a significant impact on people’s impressions.

Darryl and the row of women were the only ones left in the room.

...

Lily Lyndon purchased Mansion No. 002 located right beside Darby Mansion after viewing it.

Jade told her that Mansion No. 001 was not for sale, no matter how much Lily offered.

Lily sold the previous house and found a moving company within days. She renovated the mansion exceptionally well.

Lily did not go live on the platform that day. She stared at the mirror as she took out ‘The Worship of

Crystal' delightfully since she was in a great mood. She gazed at the 20 sets of clothing hung in the dressing room and tried them set after set.

Should she wear jeans, a wrap skirt, a dress, or shorts?

“Mom, can you give me your opinion on which to wear?” Lily asked. “I’m going to meet a fan tomorrow.”

Exactly. She was dressing up for something important the next day. She was going to meet a fan.

Chapter 213

Lily's popularity had increased tremendously, making her a huge live streamer on the Longya Live Streaming Platform.

Initially, 'Hill' was the only person who would donate to her streams. Then, many other loaded people started donating too.

One of her most generous fans known as 'Mister D' would buy her virtual gifts worth thousands of bucks.

Of course, the amount of money Mister D spent on her did not surpass Hill.

However, Hill only donated money. He never attempted to talk to her. On the other hand, Mister D would donate and chat with her.

Mister D had asked Lily to meet with him as she ended her stream the previous day.

Lily was hesitant, but Samantha was highly supportive.

She wanted her daughter to mingle with wealthy people to have a better future.

She wanted Lily to try out clothes and dress up

nicely for her date with a fan the next day.

‘The Worship of Crystal’ paired with her jeans had an unexplainable appeal. She looked even more charming than other celebrities in them.

Samatha nodded with a satisfied smile, “Dear, your outfit is going to take Mister D’s breath away. You can start going out with him if he is handsome.”

“Mom, stop joking,” Lily mumbled.

“I’m not joking,” Samantha retracted her smile. “Listen, you should find a potential husband. Anyone will be better than Darryl. You can get to know so many rich men as a live streamer. You can pick any of them!”

....

Darryl stared at the row of women in the private room. They were indeed beautiful.

One of them with a great figure was even wearing a short skirt. He sighed as he walked forward to untie them.

“Leave, hurry. Be more cautious next time. Don’t get caught,” Darryl whispered.

A man of honor knows that there are things that must not be done. All those women were from the Grandmaster Heaven Cult, and as their Hall Master,

Darryl could act out in malice to them. He never saw himself as a good person, however.

It would be grave if he tarnished these women. He could not do it.

“You... Are you letting us go?” Their faces were frozen in shock.

They were utterly devastated when they were caught. They knew that the Grandmaster Heaven Cult and the Eternal Life Palace Sect did not get along well, although they were both cults!

Why was the man letting them go?

“Hurry, what are you waiting for?” Darryl mumbled, leaving the KTV before the women.

The women stood up hurriedly and followed behind him with gratitude.

Oriental Pearl.

Darryl released the women and gave them some cash. He took a cab to the hotel where Chester and his men were having drinks while waiting for him.

He figured that Wayne Woodall would be put to good use that day.

He had been providing services free of charge every time Darryl visited the hotel. He guessed that Wayne would not accept his money again, although

more than a hundred men from the Eternal Life Palace Sect were eating and drinking there.

A woman's shriek was heard from the street nearby when Darryl was about to step into the lobby.

“What are you doing?”

Darryl stopped abruptly from the sudden commotion and looked over. Over 10 men were surrounding a woman, trying to tie her up with a rope.

Darryl shook his head in dismay.

‘Kidnapping someone out in the open in the middle of the day? Does the law even exist anymore?’

Many people passed through the busy street, but not one soul dared to get involved, let alone call the police.

The woman's clothing was torn as she struggled, and a valiant fire phoenix tattoo on her back was revealed.

‘That tattoo... Sh*t!’ Isn't that Dax Sander's wife, Nancy Lee? It is her! Why are these men kidnapping her?’

Darryl sprinted to her without a second thought and shouted, “Stop!”

‘Darryl Darby?’

Nancy's face lit up with joy when she saw Darryl before she shouted with panic, "Darryl, don't come over! Get Dax!"

She knew that Darryl was strong enough to defeat a shark by himself. However, those men were not to be trifled with. They were ready to fight and kill!

They were Brandon Guy's men.

The mafia of Donghai City was divided into two. Brandon and Abby Guy owned the east of the city. Dax Sanders owned the west.

Although they did not have any external conflict, they were secretly trying to eliminate each other.

Two weeks ago, Dax Sanders had opened an entertainment center in Donghai City. It managed to attract a bunch of young people.

Brandon sent his men to wreck the place out of pure envy. However, Dax summoned hundreds of his own men to beat up Brandon's. They were promptly sent to the hospital.

He failed to cause trouble, leaving his men injured.

Chapter 214

Brandon was furious and utterly humiliated. He called Dax, demanding that he apologize and compensate him for the incident.

“F*ck off,” Dax spat. It was all he said before ending the call.

Brandon had never been cursed at like that, especially in his current status. He was fuming, swearing that he would take revenge.

Then, he heard that Nancy Lee was Dax’s beautiful wife.

Brandon was filled with lust. He planned to sleep with Dax’s wife as a payback.

Brandon’s men had been tailing Nancy the past week. He finally sent around 10 bulky men to kidnap her that day.

Nancy gave up all hope when no one on the streets dared to step forward. She did not expect Darryl to turn up at all.

However, she was doubtful that Darryl could defeat them. He might even lose his life if he got himself involved!

“Darryl, go! Find Dax!” Nancy screamed frightenedly, stomping her feet in frustration.

Darryl approached them hastily without any intention to retreat.

His bro’s woman was in trouble. He could never call himself a man if he chose to ignore it.

“Rascal, do you want to die?”

The bald man leading the bulky men had a prominent scar on his head. He pointed his finger at Darryl, glaring at him intimidatingly.

Hundreds of passersby crowded the area, but no one dared to get involved.

“I don’t care who you are. I’ll give you two minutes to get out of my sight,” Darryl snarled.

He would not allow them to take Nancy, no matter what.

Those guys were obviously not good people. They would definitely defile Nancy if they took her away.

“Are you f*cking crazy? Why are you getting involved in our business? Boys, finish him!” The bald man raised a brow menacingly.

The bulky men released Nancy from their grip and surrounded Darryl in an instant. They moved their

arms and revealed the steel pipes hidden in their sleeves!

“Darryl, don’t be rash! Listen to me, go and get Dax!” Nancy was anxious—sweating profusely. She stomped over in her heels and pushed Darryl away, her pretty face filled with concern.

“Leave! You’re outnumbered; you’re not going to win. Go, just go!”

Darryl grasped her arm and pulled her to his back, “Stop talking, stay behind me.”

“You—!”

Nancy bit her lip as she felt a ripple of emotions stirring inside her.

However, she was still overwhelmed with anxiety because of Darryl’s stupidity! She knew that he was capable, but how could he defeat so many of them?

“Finish him!” The bald man roared with impatience.

‘This kid must either be extremely stupid or a complete r*tard for trying to play the hero here. He must be f*cking crazy.’

A cold smile appeared on Darryl’s face as he gathered his cultivated internal energy. Then, he charged forward with his fists clenched.

Thump... Thump... Thump...

Darryl threw seven or eight punches, and the few men who were charging toward him were lying flat on the ground within five seconds!

As Darryl's cultivation level increased, his Wing Chun combined with his cultivation perfectly. A Level Four Master's capability was no joke!

However, a strong wolf cannot hold a group of dogs. There were way too many of them. They wielded steel pipes and even sharp knives.

The other men surrounded Darryl in an instant when they realized that their companions were defeated. They wordlessly charged toward Darryl, ready to strike him down!

Darryl started to panic, cold sweat dripping down his face.

“Kill him!” The bald man was alarmed. He would be severely reprimanded if he could not kidnap Nancy Lee even though he brought around 20 men!

Thump! Thump! Thump!

A few blows from the steel pipes landed on Darryl's head. His blood started to pour out, trickling down his face.

He would not have been injured this severely even if he was alone. This time, he had Nancy to protect. He

wanted to summon the Blood Drinking Sword, but he had no time. The steel pipes and knives fell on him like rain, suffering from every hit from just a tiny bit of distraction!

Someone stabbed Darryl's back with the knife, the blood saturating quickly through his shirt.

“Darryl!”

Nancy stared at the pool of blood teary-eyed as she bit on her lip hard.

Darryl could sense that he was losing strength, his movements getting sluggish. He could not hold on much longer!

“Get the woman, hurry!” The bald man shouted. He noticed that the crowd was growing, which meant that the policemen would be there soon. He let out a battle cry with a mixture of anger and fear as his gaze fell on Nancy.

Around 10 men surrounded Nancy instantly.

Nancy shrieked amid the pulling and dragging before she fell to the ground.

Darryl noticed, climbing on top of Nancy as he gritted his teeth to cover her!

Nancy was incredibly touched to be protected by Darryl.

Chapter 215

“F*ck, get this kid away from here!” The bald man was furious.

‘This rascal here really wants to cause trouble!’

Clang! Clunk!

The men instantly closed in on Darryl, striking him with steel pipes repeatedly!

Darryl clenched his jaw, trying to stay on top of Nancy without budging.

His blood was dripping onto Nancy’s face.

“Darryl, let me be! Get up! You’re going to die...” Nancy trembled as she cried anxiously.

“I’m not getting up!” Darryl gritted his teeth and clenched his fists.

“Hall Master!”

“How dare you lay your hands on our Hall Master?!”

More than a hundred muscular men in black rushed out of the hotel lobby with rage. They were the disciples of the Eternal Life Palace Sect!

They had been waiting for Darryl’s arrival in the

lobby. They thought that something was off when Darryl did not appear after waiting for some time. Then, they heard the clamoring outside and rushed out immediately to see Darryl getting beaten on the ground.

It was way over their limit!

“You're—”

The bald guy was stunned. The men were rushing over like a rolling tide!

He wailed before getting into the car to flee!

“Darryl, are you okay?!” Chester asked, his face stricken with worry.

“Darryl, how are you feeling? Are you alright?!” Nancy was sobbing uncontrollably, her tears trickling down her face continuously.

Darryl strained to sit up. Suppressing the burning sensation on his back, he smiled at Nancy.

“I'm fine, you should look for Dax now.”

Darryl did not know which gang those men were from. However, he figured that they must have an ominous background, so he asked Nancy to look for Dax for her safety.

“But you...” Nancy bit her lip with worry.

Darryl shook his head and pointed to the disciples

around them, “I’m fine. They’ll take care of me.”

Nancy left after Darryl insisted. However, she kept turning back to check on Darryl with concern in her eyes.

Darryl tended to his wounds that afternoon. The disciples of the Eternal Life Palace Sect stayed with Darryl in the hospital ward.

The young nurse was alarmed as she clearly remembered Darryl to be a live-in-son-in-law. She even remembered that he could not afford to pay for his father’s medical bill when he had a heart attack.

‘Why does he have so many men with him this time around?’

It was a rare scene in the hospital. The young nurse did not utter a word while treating Darryl’s wounds, leaving immediately after she was done.

Darryl lit a cigarette. “What’s your name?” he asked a strong-built disciple.

The disciple clasped his hands together and answered respectfully, “I’m Caelan Lewis, Hall Master.”

Caelan. Caelan Lewis.

Darryl nodded in acknowledgment. The disciple

seemed to be a capable one as he was visibly respected by the others. Based on his strength, he should be a Third Level Master. He appeared intelligent, as well.

Darryl smiled lightly and nodded, "Caelan, that's a powerful name. Good, that's good. You are the Vice Hall Master from now on! You will lead the brothers in the Hall when I'm not present."

"Hall Master, I'm afraid that I can't take this responsibility," Caelen stammered.

It was hard to digest that he was suddenly appointed to be the Vice Hall Master. He was just another insignificant disciple of the Hall.

Darryl laughed, "You are the Vice Hall Master, as I said."

A sudden thought came to his mind.

"By the way, pass a message to the military adviser that I'm not going to send him off tonight."

Now that the Hall in Donghai City was established, it was time for him as the military advisor to return to the Altar.

The Altar for the Eternal Life Palace Sect was located in Eternal Life Island, thousands of miles away from Donghai City. Darryl intended to send Chester off, but his injuries were too excruciating.

“Understood,” Caelan responded, turning around to leave the ward.

Darryl waited for him to leave. Then, he stood up to refine the Godly pill while wincing from the stinging pain all over his body. He realized that the pill was useful during the auction. There was no harm in refining more of it.

The second morning.

Darryl was sleeping soundly on the hospital bed when he heard someone knocking on the door.

Pearl Hahn—in her professional outfit—trotted to his bed.

Chapter 216

"President Darby, Donghai Television Station sent us an invitation for an evening gala," said Pearl.

"What evening gala?" Darryl asked absent-mindedly.

Pearl smiled and replied, "The Mid-Autumn Festival is near, and they're holding a gala for that. It's a grand event as many celebrities will be there, and all the big shots in Donghai City are going, as well."

Pearl's face glowed with pride as she continued, "Platinum Corporation promoted two celebrities recently, Giselle Lindt and Lana Thomas. The station wants them to attend the gala, so our company is the first to receive an invitation. As the president of the company, you can't miss a celebration event like this."

'Is it mid-autumn already?'

Darryl nodded. "Fine, make the preparations."

"Very well."

....

It was 7 pm, and the TV station building was

showered with brilliant lights.

The Donghai Satellite Television Building was one of the most beautiful buildings in the city. It looked exceptionally breathtaking when it was bathed in lights as it stood beside the city moat at night. Many young couples were on the bridge to take photos of the tower.

That was the venue for the Mid-Autumn Festival Gala.

The banquet hall had been newly decorated; every corner displayed extravagance and grandeur.

Those who attended the gala were either distinguished personages in Donghai City, presidents of entertainment companies, or celebrities.

It was the biggest Mid-Autumn Festival celebration in Donghai City's history!

The celebrated Giselle Lindt and Lana Thomas from S9 were already at the event venue. Some other celebrities also performed their songs at the event!

Countless reporters and fans had gathered at the plaza.

The event venue was already cramped even though the gala would only start at 8 pm.

It was already 7.30 pm when a Mercedes-Benz S600

Pullman Guard pulled into the building.

The event crew quickly approached the vehicle and opened the car door courteously.

Two charming figures walked out of the car; they were Giselle Lindt and Lana Thomas.

The fans started to clamor as soon as those two revealed their presence.

Giselle looked dazzling and charming with her long maroon dress and her silver stilettos.

Lana Thomas was sexy yet elegant in a white evening gown embellished with diamond shards.

The two beauties in red and white complemented each other as they stood side by side. They immediately attracted the attention of many reporters and cameras.

Then, a man in a suit got down from the car.

The man had a neat figure; he looked handsome with the angular contours of his face. He emitted an unexplainable and mysterious aura with his dark sunglasses.

That man was Darryl.

He did not like to attend crowded events like that, but it was an event he could not refuse.

He was worried that he might meet that a*shole

and his past as a live-in son-in-law might get exposed. He decided to put on a pair of shades so that no one could recognize him. ①

Giselle and Lana approached Darryl with a smile when he got out of the car. Then, all three of them entered the venue, with Darryl sandwiched between the two ladies.

'Wow.'

The crowd envied Darryl.

'Who is this?'

'How did he get two celebrities, Giselle Lindt and Lana Thomas, to come to this event with him?'

Many guests had already arrived at the venue. The banquet hall was exceptionally luxurious, and every single guest had an impressive background.

Most of the guests had their eyes on Giselle and Lana. They were stunning and famous, so they would definitely be in the spotlight wherever they go.

Darryl passed through the crowd with Giselle and Lana beside him; he occasionally stopped to socialize with the other guests.

Of course, Giselle and Lana did most of the talk; Darryl kept silent most of the time.

"Aren't you the pretty Giselle Lindt?"

An unpleasant and enigmatic voice echoed just as Darryl found his seat.

Darryl turned around; he was stunned for a brief second before he burst into a laugh.

'Isn't this guy a little overweight?'

Darryl thought that Zhu Bajie had come to life.

However, it was only Dalton Zander, the man Giselle slapped when he tried to take advantage of her.

Chapter 217

Dalton stood arm-in-arm with a young woman, who was taller than him.

"My beautiful Giselle, are you interested in getting a drink with me?" Dalton asked teasingly as he approached her.

He looked at Giselle from top to bottom, but he ignored Darryl, who stood beside her.

He thought that Darryl was a bodyguard because of his sunglasses.

Giselle pursed her lips; she did not reply to him. She felt disgusted whenever she thought about his hands on her when she had an interview in Dalton's company.

Dalton was angry with Giselle's silence. "Giselle Lindt, why are you a prude? How are you these days? No one is offering you movie deals and or even advertisements, right? Do you know the reason for that?"

Dalton looked triumphant.

Giselle's neutral expression turned into anger. "You are the one behind that?"

Darryl's brows furrowed even more.

Giselle had stayed in the company building for some time because she had nothing else to do. In comparison, Lana's schedule was packed even though she debuted later than Giselle. Even less popular variety shows did not want Giselle as their guest.

Darryl knew that something was off when Pearl reported that, but he did not look into it. 1

Darryl finally understood what had happened after he heard Dalton's words.

It was because of that fat man.

"I've warned you! You'd not get any resources no matter how popular you were when you debuted if you refuse to work with me! Do you regret it now? It's okay; it is not too late yet. There is still space in my bed."

Giselle trembled with fury, and she wanted to retort a reply when Darryl stopped her.

"Don't bother with him," Darryl said in a neutral tone.

Dalton's expression changed drastically; his flabby cheeks twitched.

'The f*ck! How dare this bodyguard talk to me like

that?'

He glared at Darryl as he yelled, "Who do you think you are? You're only a bodyguard; you have no right to speak here. Get out of my sight."

"He's our president," Giselle said.

Dalton was stunned for a moment before he burst into laughter. "Oh, you're the President of Platinum Corporation? I didn't know that your president is only a kid! Why are you wearing sunglasses at night? Are you pretending to be a panda? I was shocked; I thought that you are an emperor."

'Is he dumb?'

Darryl had no intention to bother with him, and so, he kept quiet.

However, Dalton was one of those people who liked to push his luck. When he noticed Darryl's silence, Dalton stood up abruptly and pointed to his nose. "Kiddo, you're the president of Platinum Corporation, but so what? How long has it been since you built the company? How many resources and connections do you have? You are worthless to me! I'll make it clear today, I will definitely have Giselle Lindt! You should terminate your contract with her if you're smart. Otherwise, I will make sure that Platinum Corporation will not last through the year."

Darryl's expression was icy-cold.

There was one thing that he hated the most in his life, and that was when people pointed their fingers at him.

"Get your pig hooves away from my face," Darryl said coldly. ①

"Are you f*cking kidding me?!"

Dalton was enraged!

The event had already started, and the emcee had already made introductions on the stage. The commotion they caused alarmed the other nearby guests, and they looked toward them with curiosity.

Dalton was embarrassed. He waved his arms, and two muscle men appeared from the side.

The men were covered in tattoos, and they were extremely muscular; they were also about 2 meters tall. They were Sam and Liam Jacobs, Dalton's bodyguards. Dalton had spent an enormous amount of money to hire them!

Dalton was smug about it. "Kiddo, come to the washroom with me if you have guts. Let's talk there."
"

Darryl smiled and nodded. "Sure, I have some things to say to you in private, too."

"Great, you have guts! I'll wait for you there then. You're a p*ssy if you bail." Dalton smirked.

He walked toward the washroom with his bodyguards.

The guests nearby looked at Darryl and shook their heads.

'Young people these days are just too blatant. No one in the entertainment industry has the guts to challenge Dalton Zander so far.'

'This guy is digging his own grave.'

Darryl maintained the light smile on his face as he walked toward the washroom.

"Darryl."

Lana rushed forward and held Darryl's arm, and concern was written all over her face, "Darryl, don't be reckless. Dalton Entertainment is highly influential in the entertainment industry. Why are you competing with him? Just ignore him."

Lana knew the rules even though she had not been in the entertainment industry for long. She knew that no one would ever dare to provoke Dalton Entertainment.

Chapter 218

Giselle was also overwhelmed with worry. She bit her lips and said softly, "Brother Darryl, it's fine."

Darryl smiled at her. "Don't worry; we'll do nothing but talk. We won't fight."

"Darryl, listen to me. Don't go," Lana advised softly.

The two bodyguards were about two meters tall! Things would not end well for Darryl if he were to go to the washroom.

"Listen, I can't allow you to go. Do you hear me?" Lana continued to persuade him.

"It's fine, don't worry." Darryl walked toward the washroom in giant steps.

When they realized that they could not stop him, Giselle and Lana glanced at each other worriedly.

Darryl arrived at the washroom. He saw Dalton and the two bodyguards as soon as he stepped into the restroom.

Dalton approached him. "Kiddo, there's still time for you to kneel and apologize for your mistake."

Dalton thought the kiddo would be willing to

acknowledge his mistake if he had some sense in him.

However, he was utterly wrong about that.

Darryl chuckled and walked to the urinal. He unzipped his pants and peed as he said in an unhurried tone. "An apology is a must, but it should be one from you and not me."

"F*ck! You a*shole! Finish him!"

Dalton was enraged when he heard Darryl's words.

His bodyguards charged with their fists the moment they heard his command.

Darryl was amused.

'How did they get hired as bodyguards with these skills? Their height is a waste; they're moving too slowly.'

Darryl extended a leg, and it caused Sam and Liam to trip and fall onto the slippery floor!

The two men into Dalton.

"Ow!"

Dalton, who was overweight, did not have agile legs. He could not dodge his two underlings, and so, he fell with them.

"F*ck! You piece of sh*t!"

Dalton cursed furiously when Darryl turned and splashed his urine on Dalton and his bodyguards' faces.

"I'm gonna f*cking kill you!"

Dalton felt extremely humiliated, and he exploded with fury. He started to curse angrily again as Darryl's pee spilled into his mouth. 1

The shocked and outraged bodyguards tried to get up.

However, Darryl stepped onto their bodies, or their Baihui acupoints, to be exact. The men felt numb all over their bodies, and they could not exert any force at all.

Giselle and Lana were anxious as they waited outside the washroom.

They had followed Darryl to the washroom because they could not sit still. However, they stopped at the entrance because they were embarrassed to go into the room.

"Teacher, why don't we go in?" Giselle bit her lips and asked softly.

Lana's face flushed with embarrassment as she hesitated. "But it's the men's room."

However, Lana could not hide her anxiety.

They had to go in even if it was the men's room!

Lana made her decision after two seconds. "Fine, let's go."

Both of them walked into the washroom in their heels.

"Darryl, are you okay? You—"

Lana asked with concern as they entered the washroom, but her face flushed crimson when she saw the situation!

Giselle's delicate body also shivered from the shock!

Dalton Zander and his bodyguards were on the floor, and Darryl... Well, Darryl was urinating on Dalton's face.

"Argh..."

Lana and Giselle shrieked simultaneously after two seconds of silence. They covered their flushed faces and turned around swiftly before they ran off.

'Why did Darryl do that? How embarrassing!'

'We shouldn't have gone in!'

Chapter 219

Giselle and Lana looked even more charming with their reddened faces when they returned to the banquet hall even though they were embarrassed.

The scene in the washroom replayed in their minds like a film.

Dalton was on the floor in the washroom, and he was drenched in urine.

Darryl pulled his pants up and said mischievously, "Oops! Sorry for getting my piss on you! Why did you have to disturb me when I was peeing?"

"F*ck you! You are doomed! Doomed!"

Dalton's face was full of hatred; he was exasperated!

As the president of Dalton Entertainment, he had never experienced humiliation like that!

F*cking hell! He would have to murder that kid one day!

Darryl smiled at him. "Fatso, what kind of attitude is that? Come on; I only peed on you a little! Here, I'll wash it off for you."

Darryl grabbed Dalton's collar and pressed his head

into a urinal.

Gulp

Dalton was shocked and angry, but he could not react in time, so he swallowed a few mouthfuls. His fat body twitched as he struggled like a dying toad.

Darryl pressed Dalton's neck so that he could not budge no matter how he struggled.

Dalton could not get off. He got very dizzy, and so he tapped on Darryl's leg.

Darryl let go of him slowly.

Dalton retched for a few moments before he sat down and gasped for breath.

"Brother, mercy... It was my fault, my fault..." Dalton begged with a horrified expression.

Dalton was utterly petrified! Since his bodyguards were no match to that man, he might torture Dalton again if he acted stubbornly.

Even though he surrendered, his mind was filled with hatred!

'F*ck, I've never tasted piss before! Just you wait, I'll get you when I have the chance.'

Darryl gave Dalton a cold smile and adjusted his suit before he walked out of the washroom.

D*mn it! He got a little urine on him when the fatso struggled against him.

Darryl walked out of the washroom as he thought about whether he should go back to get changed.

As he thought about it, two women walked toward him hurriedly and one of them knocked right into him!

"Argh!"

A deafening scream reverberated in his ear.

'What the f*ck? Is she blind? How did she knock into me with this much space around us?'

Darryl was unable to speak.

However, he looked at the person in front of him, and he was stunned.

The woman seemed to be a celebrity who had attended the gala.

Her lilac evening gown revealed her long slender legs and complimented her lovely figure. She looked enchanting with her long wavy hair.

"Are you blind? Watch where you're going!" The woman shouted before Darryl could speak.

'What?' Darryl was dumbfounded. 'You were the one who knocked into me; why are you scolding me

instead?'

She was Sunny Scott, a celebrity who had gained recent popularity. Another woman in black-framed glasses stood behind her; she was her assistant.

The assistant was also very unreasonable. She pointed at Darryl and yelled, "Look where you're going! Apologize to Ms. Scott now!"

Sunny had a grim expression on her face. The gala would start soon, and she was the first to perform on stage. She was on her way to the stage when she realized that her diamond earring worth a million bucks was missing!

Sunny panicked and started to search for the earring with her assistant when she knocked into Darryl. She thought he was a security guard because of his attire. Sunny was already anxious, so she unleashed all her anger on Darryl.

"Apologize, now!" Sunny demanded as she gritted teeth; her gaze was cold.

Darryl furrowed his brows before he smiled at her. "I'm confused. Why do I need to apologize to you? You were the one who knocked into me."

'F*ck, these two women must be crazy. They're pretty, but they have no manners at all. How dare they tell me to watch where I'm going when they

were the ones who knocked into me?'

"You—" Sunny was furious, and so, she said arrogantly, "You must be a security guard here. Don't you have any manners? Do you want to lose your job?"

'How rude! He's a security guard; how dare he talk back to me? This is absurd.'

"Do you know who she is?" The assistant walked toward him. "You'd suffer for offending Ms. Scott."

The assistant demanded again, "Apologize to her. Quickly now!"

Chapter 220

'Such a domineering tone!' Suddenly, Darryl had an idea; he smiled and said, "Tell me, please, who is Ms. Scott? How would she make me suffer?"

The assistant sighed; she thought that the bodyguard was an idiot who wanted to stall instead of apologizing. She shook her head. "This is Miss Sunny Scott, the most popular female celebrity in Dalton Entertainment. You will definitely lose your job if you upset her."

'Oh, Dalton Entertainment? Your president just drank my piss.'

Darryl sneered. Then he said in a calm tone, "I don't care who you are. You are in the wrong because you were the one who knocked into me. I'm already giving you face by not demanding an apology from you. Stop bothering me."

'I just gave the president of Dalton Entertainment a lesson, so why would I be afraid of a little celebrity under his company?'

The other guests had gathered to watch the scene. They pointed at Darryl and shook their heads with disapproval.

'This security guard is really something. Why would he oppose a celebrity?'

Sunny kept a straight face, but she was furious. "Just you wait. Are you confident because you got a job as a security guard after leaving your home in the rural area? How dare you contradict my words!"

There was a commotion from the direction of the washroom before Dalton Zander appeared. The two bodyguards supported him.

The three of them were utterly drenched.

Dalton looked extremely distressed. He had rinsed himself with tap water, but the stench was nowhere near gone. He was extremely disgusted!

"President Zander."

Joy illuminated Sunny's face when she saw him. She called out in a coquettish voice and approached him hurriedly.

Sunny stomped her feet in anger and complained, "President Zander, that security guard knocked into me!"

Sunny furrowed her brows and covered her nose.

'Why is there a stench on President Zander?'

However, Sunny did not put her mind to it.

"Who? Who dares to offend Sunny Scott?" Dalton exploded in a fury.

His lust for women was a commonly known fact, and many of the female celebrities in his company had slept with him. Sunny was his then-current target, so he had to stand up for her when she was bullied. He had to play the hero for her!

"Him." Sunny turned and pointed to Darryl, who stood nearby.

'What?'

Dalton gulped when he realized that it was Darryl; the drastic change of expression on his face was hilarious! The memory of the horrifying scene in the washroom was still vivid for him.

"Dalton Zander, it looks like Dalton Entertainment's management isn't up to standard; you can't even manage your celebrity well." Darryl walked toward him with a fake smile. "She doesn't even have basic manners, although she is a public figure. Why don't I give you a lesson on how to manage your employees?"

"How dare you act like this when you're just an insignificant security guard—" Sunny said coldly as she pointed a finger at Darryl; her delicate face looked furious.

Dalton interrupted her with a sudden roar. "Shut your mouth!"

D*mn! He could not afford to offend him again after he drank the man's piss! A wise man would always know to pick his battle!

Sunny's body trembled from shock, and she kept silent with confusion in her eyes.

'What's the matter with President Zander?'

He never spoke that loudly at her.

Dalton grabbed Sunny's hair before she could react and dragged her toward Darryl.

"Apologize, right now! This is President Darby, the president of Platinum Corporation. Apologize, daft woman!" Dalton panicked and shouted.

Sunny squirmed from the pain, and she finally understood that the 'security guard' was not someone she could afford to offend! Sunny quivered before she decided to give up on her pride and ego.

"I'm sorry; it was my fault." Sunny bit her lips after she said that to Darryl in a soft voice.

Gasp

It caused an uproar in the crowd.

What had happened?

The imperious Dalton Zander had given in someone else?!

Even Sunny Scott, who was famous for her bad temper in the entertainment industry, had apologized to the man!

Darryl looked at Dalton with a smile. "Hmm, that's better. Be more careful next time."

He walked away after he said those words.

"F*ck!" Dalton gritted his teeth in anger with a bitter expression as he stared at Darryl's back.

He had to take revenge for what had happened that day, or he did not deserve to be a man!

'I will treat your wife and your family how you treated me today!'

Dalton clenched his fists tightly as his fat face quivered in anger.

Chapter 221

The gala was quite dull; it was just an event where celebrities performed on stage.

Darryl walked around the venue, but he did not see Giselle and Lana. He figured they were backstage to wait for their turn to get on stage for their performances.

He decided not to stay for them; he wanted to go home, take a shower, and go to sleep.

He left the Donghai Satellite Television Building and lit a cigarette near the entrance. It was almost 9 pm; the lights flickered as people walked around the streets.

Darryl was about to call a taxi when he noticed two men acting suspiciously beside a luxurious MPV.

One of them was skinnier than the other, and they placed a bag behind the MPV's trunk before they hid behind a utility pole.

'What are those two doing?' Darryl smoked his cigarette as he watched with interest.

A pretty woman in a white dress walked by a few moments later. She looked like a college student.

She had the keys in her hand, and she got up to the MPV. She ignited its engine and reversed to get out of the parking.

Thump

The two men, who hid near the utility pole, immediately appeared when the car knocked over the bag on the ground.

"Hey, do you know how to drive? Can't you see that there's something behind your car? Come out!" The fat man knocked on the car window repeatedly with a stern expression as he urged the woman to get out of the vehicle.

The skinny man crouched as he opened the luggage with a pained expression. "My antique vase! I just purchased it for two million bucks! It's broken!"

The luggage was filled with vase shards and pieces.

'How funny! Con men these days are pretty skilled.' Darryl continued to watch with enthusiasm.

The fat man's shout attracted passersby, and they had gathered around the incident.

The young woman was in a daze. She got out of the car and stared at the vase pieces; she looked stupefied.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry..." Her face paled as she was in

shock. The fat man mentioned that the antique vase was worth two million bucks. How could she afford to compensate them?

Dora Simpson bit her lips; she was anxious. She was a student from Donghai University, and she had a part-time job as a driver to earn tuition fees because she was not from a wealthy family.

She did not expect to get in trouble on her first day at her job.

"I didn't see it. I'm sorry. I'm really sorry..." Dora sweated profusely as she apologized over and over again.

"No way! My two million bucks worth vase is broken! You must be rich since you're driving this car! Pay me back now!" The skinny one rolled his eyes and put on a menacing expression.

'What?'

'Two million?'

The crowd gasped. It was an impossible amount for regular folk.

Those who did not understand the situation sighed in relief when they saw the type of car she drove.

"Young lady, you're rich anyway; just pay him back."
"

"That's right! You are the one who broke his vase."

Dora was horrified. She panicked and said, "I don't have the money, I'm just a driver..."

It was two million bucks.

She could never earn that much money even if she worked her whole life.

The skinny man kept a straight face and interrupted in an unfriendly tone, "Young lady, you have to fix your mistake. You'll have to pay me back!"

The fat man continued to say, "That's right! Young lady, we're not looking for trouble, and we're not asking for more than the vase's worth. We spent two million on this vase; we even have the receipt and certificate. Look!"

He passed the receipt and certificate that they had prepared earlier to the woman. Then he said, "You seem educated. You can't deny the truth that you broke our porcelain vase."

Dora took the certificate helplessly; she was on the verge of tears.

One of the women in the crowd could no longer stand the situation; she said, "Young lady, you'll have to compensate them for the vase you broke, but is it really worth two million bucks? Two

million bucks? That might be a fake certificate; they're everywhere and easy to get!"

The crowd came to their senses, and most of them agreed with the woman. "Exactly, you have no proof. Was the vase worth two million bucks, even if it was an antique?"

Chapter 222

"You can't just name an exorbitant price just because the girl is young."

The two con men were not worried about the crowd's discussion.

They were professional con men; they were well prepared. The certificate might have been fake, but the vase was an actual antique from the Yuan dynasty, although they had only spent a thousand bucks to purchase it.

The two purposely chose to act on someone with a luxurious car. They placed the luggage behind the vehicle and waited for the driver to knock over it when they reversed their car. Then they would appear and accuse the driver of breaking their vase.

The driver would be bitter if they were to know about it.

"You don't believe that it's worth two million bucks? Anyone here from the antique field? Come and decide if we are lying," the skinny man scanned through the crowd and said confidently.

"I work at Donghai City Museum; I can take a look."

A middle-aged man with gold-rimmed glasses

approached them and showed them his employee card.

The crowd immediately grew silent.

The middle-aged man took a piece of the porcelain and observed it. Then he turned to the fat man and said, "Do you know the vase belonged to which dynasty?"

"Of course. It's palace delftware from the Yuan dynasty," the fat man replied without any hesitation.

The middle-aged man nodded. "You're right; it is indeed delftware. This is a delftware vase from the Yuan dynasty because it has aged firing. The pattern on the vase is also a significant trait. The composition is rich and layered but not messy; it is much simpler and elegant than the delftware from Tang and Song dynasty."

He raised the porcelain in his hand for the crowd to examine as he continued to say, "Here, look at this. The thick patterns rendered on the delftware was formed from one strong yet smooth stroke. I can verify that this delftware porcelain was from the Yuan dynasty, and it should be worth two million bucks!"

The crowd immediately gasped when they heard that.

It was delftware from the Yuan dynasty, indeed.

The crowd shifted their gaze toward Dora after the revelation.

'The reckless young lady is doomed for breaking the vase.'

Dora was utterly dumbfounded and on the verge of tears. "I don't have any money. I'm just a student, and I'm working as a driver. This is my employer's car."

She was worried that the two might not believe her, so she took out her student identification card and passed it to them. "Maybe I can write an IOU and pay you back in installments? You can take my student identification as a pledge."

The con men glanced at each other before they shook their heads in unison.

An IOU? No way!

They would flee as soon as they got their money; there was no way that they would want an IOU!

"What can we do with your student identification? You can call your family to give you the money if you don't have it," the skinny man said indifferently as he pushed the identification aside.

The fat man said, "We're not trying to blackmail

you; everyone else is watching us, too! Don't make this harder for the two of us; money doesn't grow on trees. We are upset because our vase is broken."

Dora could not think of a reply. She bit her lip as her tears started to fall.

Where would she get two million bucks to pay them?

Darryl could no longer bear to stand idle. He took two steps forward and smiled as he said, "Alright, you can stop your acts now."

The con men had no virtue at all.

They refused to let the girl go even though she was clearly a poor university student.

"Who the f*ck are you?!"

The con men got angry and scolded him.

Darryl maintained a light smile on his face as he continued forward; he ignored the two con men. He took a porcelain piece from the luggage and said calmly, "I admit that your acting skills are not bad, but your conning tactic is too despicable."

Darryl walked toward the middle-aged man who claimed to be an employee at the museum and said in a serious tone, "You were right; this is indeed delftware from the Yuan dynasty, but you only

looked at the surface, and you did not look further into it. Let me give you a lesson on how to look at antiques."

Shawn Larson thought that Darryl was hilarious. It was the first time someone had offered to teach him how to identify antiques after he had worked in the museum for 20 years.

Shawn's wife chuckled and said, "Boy, are you trying to teach my husband how to identify an antique?"

Chapter 223

"Your analysis is correct. The vase is worth two million bucks if it is still in pristine condition."

Darryl continued, "However, you missed something, the time when the vase was broken."

Shawn's expression changed, but he did not say anything.

"Kid, you're acting like you know more than a museum employee."

"You looked like a security guard. Wait, you smell like you just came out of a washroom. Are you also a janitor?"

The crowd laughed; Darryl indeed smelled like he had urine on him.

There was one person who did not laugh; Dora stared at Darryl frozenly.

Darryl crouched and took a piece of the shattered vase. "Experts would know that the Yuan dynasty's delftware was made from a mixture of two ingredients—china stone and kaolinite. Therefore, when a delftware item broke, its yellowish base would get dark if it was exposed to air."

Darryl handed a piece of the porcelain to the middle

-aged man. "The pieces in the luggage can prove that the vase was broken quite some time ago. Based on the dark base, I'd say that it broke decades ago, possibly when it was unearthed."

Darryl shifted his gaze to the con men. "These pieces are only worth eight or nine hundred bucks, at most. Your luggage bag was only filled with broken pieces. Are you not ashamed to con people with this tactic?"

The crowd grew silent in an instant!

Shawn's fingers trembled as he held the porcelain piece. As someone with 20 years of experience in the museum, he had always believed that he was the best in Donghai City! Not even Yvonne and Kingston Young could compare to him!

He was ashamed that a young lad in his 20s was more learned and knowledgeable than him!

Shawn's wife stared at Darryl with curiosity; his knowledge amazed her!

"My name's Shawn Larson. Young man, you are very wise. I am impressed!" Shawn walked toward Darryl in a daze and handed him a name card. "This is my card. Please contact me; perhaps we can have tea when you are free!"

The crowd was in shock!

"The luggage was filled with shards?"

"How immoral!"

Dora felt like she was in a dream.

She had fallen into despair, and she even racked her brain to think of ways to get two million bucks.

However, the situation had reversed in the blink of an eye.

She looked at Darryl with gratitude.

The con men glanced at each other before they pointed at Darryl and said, "Kid, are you saying that our vase is already broken before this incident? Who the hell are you? What do you know about antiques? Stop with your bullsh*t! It's either she pays, or you pay! Maybe you can pay for her if you want to be the hero!"

The fat man took out a switchblade from his pocket and flicked it open.

It seemed like that was not their first time; they must have been in a similar situation before that day.

They were confident that Darryl was just an insignificant security guard, so they were not worried at all.

The people were shocked when they saw the

switchblade. No one dared to say anything or stand up for Dora.

Darryl laughed, "Fine, I can pay you, but give me a minute. Let me call a friend to bring me the cash."

"That's more like it!" The con men glanced at each other again. 'That kid got scared the moment he saw the switchblade. What a coward!'

Darryl took out his phone and made a call.

Dora panicked and pulled on Darryl's sleeve. "No, please don't ask your friend to bring the cash. I got myself into trouble. I'll pay them back myself."

Dora could not think of a way to get that massive amount of money. However, she could not let a stranger pay two million bucks for her! Her mother taught her to take responsibility for her own mistakes, even though they were poor.

Darryl waved his hand, but he did not speak.

The call went through, and Darryl turned on the speakerphone.

"Hey, Younger Brother! What's up?" Megan Castello smiled and said on the other line.

She had called him her young brother the moment she had nothing to ask from him. Her change of attitude was really incredible.

'Hmm?'

The con men's expressions changed drastically.

"F*ck! That voice sounds familiar..." The fat man frowned.

The skinny man gulped and nodded before he said softly, "Why does she sound like Sergeant Castello?"

The two of them were habitual offenders for highway robberies.

Megan had managed to catch them and subsequently sent them to prison multiple times.

They feared Megan more than any other policeman, so they fled like mice when they heard her voice over the phone.

Chapter 224

“What the f*ck? Is he Megan Castello’s brother?”

“F*ck, run!”

The con men panicked; they ran past the crowd and disappeared in an instant.

Darryl could not help but burst into laughter.

“Hello, Younger Brother? Why are you not talking? What’s up?” Megan asked.

There was nothing left to say as the two men were already gone.

Darryl laughed again. “Nevermind.”

He ended the call without any explanation.

Megan stomped her foot in anger on the other side of the call.

‘What the hell is wrong with Darryl Darby? Why did he call at such a late hour and disregarded me right after that?’

‘Weirdo!’

The crowd near the Donghai Television building had also dispersed.

“Thank you so much.” Dora walked toward Darryl and bowed to him in gratitude.

She was grateful that he had appeared in time, or she would not know that the two men were out to con her.

Darryl smiled and replied casually, “You’re welcome. It was nothing.”

He looked at Dora as he talked. She looked beautiful and pure.

Dora was a little shy when she said, “I’m still very thankful. I should treat you to dinner, but I have something urgent that I have to do; I have to drive my boss. So perhaps next time. May I add you as a contact on WeChat?”

Dora lowered her head as she talked; she looked reserved and shy.

‘This young lady is adorable.’ Darryl chuckled discreetly.

Darryl did not refuse her request. He walked to the street to get a taxi after he exchanged contacts with Dora.

There were not many people on the streets as it was already past 10 pm. Darryl had just hailed a cab when he heard some footsteps behind him.

He turned instinctively, but a gunny sack immediately covered his head!

Sh*t!

‘What the hell is happening?’

Darryl cursed. He wanted to struggle free when a blow struck the back of his head.

Darryl felt his head buzzed before his vision turned black, and he passed out.

He had no idea how long he was unconscious; it felt like a long dream.

Darryl had a headache when he regained consciousness.

When he opened his eyes, he realized that he was tied up.

He was in a luxurious office with simple furniture; a desk, a couch, and an expensive-looking chandelier on the ceiling.

He looked around and fixed his gaze at the couch.

A beautiful and attractive woman sat there.

She was Abby Guy, Brandon Guy’s sister.

‘Is she the one who caught me?’

Darryl had to admit that Abby was magnificent. He

remembered that she was the center of attention at Jackson Tim's wedding. Darryl also noticed that she looked even more charming then.

Her sleeveless crop top and pencil skirt really complimented her curvy figure.

Abby looked indescribably elegant and attractive as she sat on the couch cross-legged and swirled a glass of wine.

When she noticed that Darryl was staring at her, Abby smiled and got up from the couch to approach Darryl.

Darryl gulped as her slender waist and long legs were exceptionally near to him.

Abby extended her delicate hands and slapped Darryl's face a few times.

"I'm gonna slap you if you look at me like that again."

F*ck! Darryl sighed. "Miss Guy, you're a little unreasonable. Did you forget that I rescued you when you fainted because of the eight-diagram mirror at the wedding? Why did you tie up?"

Chapter 225

Abby smiled lightly and looked at Darryl. "Yes, you did save me at the wedding, but I gave you the Spiritual herb in return. You wouldn't be a cultivator if it weren't for the herb. My debt was cleared long ago."

Darryl was helpless. He smiled bitterly and said, "Fine, since it is already cleared, why did you kidnap me?"

Abby sipped her wine and said calmly, "Are you really that oblivious, or are you just acting dumb? My brother sent his men to kidnap Dax Sanders' wife, but you interrupted them. You really do have some balls for interfering with our family's business."

She stared at him, coldly.

The tension in the room was suffocating.

'So, it's because of that.'

Darryl was amused, and he stared right into Abby's eyes. "Dax is a friend of mine, so his wife is also my friend. Of course, I had to interfere."

Abby grimaced as she splashed the wine onto Darryl

's face.

F*ck...

Darryl cursed internally as he got angry. He could not free himself as his limbs were tied tightly.

He licked the wine from the corner of his lips and smiled as he suppressed his anger. "Miss Guy, this is not how you buy someone a drink."

Abby snickered. "Stop fooling around! We've been planning to kidnap Nancy Lee for a long time, yet you ruined everything and hurt my subordinates! Do you like getting into other people's businesses? Fine, I'll let you know what happens when you are nosy."

She took out a whip from the desk as she spoke.

She was furious not only because Darryl had stepped into her business.

The bald man who led the troop to kidnap Nancy was Abby's cousin named Pete Yames.

Pete had failed to kidnap Nancy, and Darryl had also beat him up. He was in recovery in the hospital.

Abby had always adored her cousin, so she would not forgive Darryl easily.

'F*ck, that woman is vicious.'

Darryl's expression changed when he saw the whip

in Abby's hand. "Abby Guy, you're going too far."

"Am I?"

Abby smiled as she held the whip in her hand. Her eyes mocked him. "I'm going too far? You are the one who ruined our plan and hurt our men!"

She struck the whip as soon as she said that!

Crack!

The whip stuck Darryl's shoulder, and the wound immediately bled.

'The f*ck! She's really going for it?!'

Darryl gritted his teeth, but he did not scream. His eyes bulged red from the pain!

"Abby, I can choose not to interfere, but you have to promise me not to bother Dax after this," Darryl said coldly after he took a sharp breath.

Abby laughed and looked at Darryl with great interest. "You're funny. Do you think that you are in a position to discuss terms with me?"

She raised the whip and struck Darryl again.

Crack! Crack! Crack!

The strikes were crisp and loud! Darryl managed to endure the pain as he gritted his teeth for the first few strokes, but he could not take it anymore after

that. He shouted, "Abby Guy!"

He wanted to curse, but it was too painful to speak!

'F*ck!'

Sweat covered Darryl's face, and his clothing was drenched with blood!

Abby stopped after more than 20 strokes and said smilingly, "Darryl, you gave my brother a Godly pill. You have more, don't you?"

"Why don't you give me one of those, and I'll let you go. I'm in a good mood today."

"You want a Godly pill? No problem, I have some with me. Untie me, and I'll get it for you," Darryl said with a smile.

Abby smirked and loosened Darryl.

Darryl was gravely injured from the whippings, so she was not worried that he might trick her.

"Where's the pill? Give it to me." Abby extended her hand and said in a cold tone after she untied Darryl.

Darryl stretched and replied faintly, "What's the hurry?"

That woman was ruthless.

However, he was not worried about his injuries

because he would recover fully after he took some pills.

Darryl cursed internally as he took the last few Godly pills that he had on him. The pills looked extremely tempting as they sat on his palm and emitted a faint medicinal scent.

Abby shuddered, and her gaze became intense. "Give them to me."

Abby had been stuck as a Level Five Master, like Brandon, for the past few years.

She had tried various ways throughout those years to have a breakthrough, but she did not manage to do it. She was anxious and frustrated about it.

Then, she learned that Brandon had obtained a Godly pill from Darryl and had a breakthrough to Level One Master General.

Chapter 226

Abby utilized her connections and power to look for those Godly pills everywhere but to no avail.

A Godly pill was sold at an extremely high price of five billion bucks at the Roger family's auction.

Abby did not attend the auction, and she regretted it immensely when she heard the news.

She was willing to give five billion, even 50 billion bucks, to achieve the Master General level. She was willing to sell her house, car, and even her company for it as a breakthrough to another level was a cultivator's lifelong target!

Darryl had a few of those pills in his palm! The Godly pills were so rare that not even the major sects have them!

Abby was overwhelmed with delight!

However, Darryl smiled sinisterly as he dodged Abby's hand before stuffing those pills into his mouth all at once.

Gulp.

He had swallowed all of them.

'What?!'

Abby shuddered and glared at Darryl before she emitted a murderous aura.

"Are you f*cking with me?"

Abby was extremely furious, and she wanted to whip him another hundred times!

He had swallowed the rare Godly pills, a few of them at once!

It was such a waste! The main effect of those Godly pills was to aid a cultivator in breaking through blockades.

As a Level Four Master, the pills do not affect Darryl, so they were wasted.

"Do you wish to die?" Flickering lights transformed into a long sword in Abby's hand before she pointed it at Darryl!

Darryl spoke coldly when the tip of the sword was about 20 centimeters from his heart, "You will never get a Godly pill if you kill me."

'F*ck you! Do you think I'd give you the pills just like that when you had struck me with a whip for 20 times? I'd rather waste all of them!'

Abby jolted and stopped the sword when she heard that.

"You already ate those pills; there's nothing left.

Are you lying to me?" Abby said in an icy-cold tone; her delicate face was grim.

Darryl smiled faintly. "They're just Godly pills. I have as many as you want."

'What?!'

'He has as many as I want?'

Abby stared at Darryl without blinking.

Godly pills were considered a rare panacea for cultivators! Even some Elders from the Six Orthodox Sects and Clans were stuck and could not break through because they could not get their hands on a Godly pill.

Yet, Darryl said that he could have many pills?

'Does he really have it, or is he tricking me?'

When he saw how Abby changed her expression so quickly like a fool, Darryl felt somewhat satisfied with the revenge.

Darryl had no intention to chat with her. He grabbed a container, which was clearly from the Qing dynasty, but Abby had used it as decor. He walked to the kitchen and placed the ingredients for Godly pills into the container before cooking them.

A Godly pill was the easiest pill to make because the ingredients could be obtained easily.

Abby frowned. "What are you doing?"

"You will know soon." Darryl was too lazy to explain. He continued making the pills in a professional manner; Abby was dumbfounded.

Alchemy required understanding and experience.

Darryl had gained mastery within that period, so his level had increased.

A Godly pill would usually require more than three hours to make.

However, he only needed less than an hour at that time.

Pop!

Darryl proceeded to open the porcelain container with a smile when he sensed the medicinal aura in it.

There were already two Godly pills in the container.

A faint medicinal scent gradually filled the room.

'What?! Did he practice alchemy to concoct the pills? And he succeeded?'

Abby was completely taken aback; the shock was written on her face, and her body quivered.

Darryl looked at her with a smile; he had the two pills in his hand before he stuffed one of them into

his mouth!

"You!"

Abby stomped her foot in panic. 'Why did he do that?! There's only one left in his palm!'

"Darryl, please! Stop eating it! Give it to me."

Chapter 227

Abby bit her lips in frustration. The Godly pill that she had been dreaming about was right in front of her, but she could not lay her hands on it!

“I can make as many of these pills you want, but I can’t just give them to anyone,” Darryl said smilingly

“Please, I’m begging you. Please give the pill to me ...” Abby’s previous arrogance had completely disappeared as she started to beg him.

There was a hint of pleasure on Darryl’s face as he acted as if he wanted to eat the last pill.

“No, stop!” Abby’s legs almost buckled. “I’m begging you, don’t put it to waste. Please don’t eat that, just give it to me... It was my fault, I shouldn’t have treated you like that. I shouldn’t have whipped you, I’m sorry...”

‘That’s more like it.’

Darryl smiled and sat on a chair. “You whipped me almost 20 times. What do you say to that?”

“You can whip me back...” Abby lowered her head.

Abby did not think that she could say such a

humiliating sentence but she was desperate for the Godly pill.

“Whip you?” Darryl sneered. “I’m not interested.”

Despite his words, Darryl observed the surrounding. There were about a hundred bodyguards in the house.

He could never leave in one piece if he did not give Abby the pill.

He sighed and tossed the pill at her.

Thud.

Abby caught the pill delightfully and took it.

Abby stared at Darryl intensely and bit her lip after she swallowed the pill. One Godly pill would not be enough if she intended to go for Martial Marquis, and then Martial Saint...

Abby continued to bite her lips as she kneeled.

Darryl could see her ample bosom from his angle.

He had to admit that Abby had a perfect figure. She looked attractive from any angle.

Darryl stared at her before he asked with a smile, “Ah, Miss Guy, what are you doing?”

“Darryl Darby.”

Abby bit her lips as if she was hesitant about her

decision. Then, she said softly, "Please take me as your disciple. I would like to learn alchemy from you."

'What? Learn alchemy from me?'

'What am I going to do if you mastered it?'

Darryl almost jumped in shock. He shook his head without even hesitation. "Learn alchemy from me? Forget it, I don't have any plans for a disciple at the moment."

Abby panicked. She moved toward Darryl on her knees and hugged his leg. "I mean it; I am genuine. Please take me as your disciple!"

Abby let go of all her ego and pride in front of Darryl.

If she could master the skills to make those Godly pills, then her future breakthroughs would be as easy as pie!

"No way." Darryl waved his hand.

"Please, Master. Accept me as a disciple." Abby leaned forward earnestly on her knees.

"No, you—" Darryl was conflicted as he knew that she would persist even if he refused to accept her. He said impatiently, "Fine, get up. I'll think about it."

“Yes, sure! Take your time.” Abby stood up with a grin and said respectfully, “Master, shall I send you back?”

“No, I can go that myself,” Darryl replied hurriedly before he scurried out the room.

Abby called Darryl almost a hundred times that afternoon.

She called him every 10 minutes. Of course, she wanted to know if Darryl was ready to accept her as a disciple.

Darryl wanted to take a nap in the office but he got her calls repeatedly.

Darryl could no longer endure it. When she called him again, he raged, “I won't take you in if you dare call me again.”

His method was proven useful as Abby stopped calling him almost immediately.

....

Dynasty Bar.

The bar was a new entertainment center. It had a grand and extravagant interior which attracted many young rich men.

Lily parked her car and waited near the entrance. It

was the day of her date with Mister D.

Lily was a little unsettled to meet at a bar for their first date. However, Mister D had lavished her with gifts before that so it would not be inappropriate for her to meet him there.

Lily looked exceptionally beautiful that day in her long dress and a pair of the Worship of Crystal. She stood at the bar's entrance and immediately became the center of everyone's attention.

All the women there had thick makeup on their faces, so a woman like Lily was like a breath of fresh air.

Vroom.

Chapter 228

Men would die to have a one-night-stand with a divine beauty like her.

Lily was uncomfortable with the crowd's gaze.

'Where is Mister D? Why is he not here yet?'

Then, she heard some car engine noises.

A McLaren sports car drove by and parked at the curb before a young man got out of the vehicle.

He looked attractive with his handsome features and angular contours. He was one of those men who would make ladies blush when they looked at him. He seemed chic and suave in his casual suit.

The women gaped in awe, and there was a twinkle in their eyes.

'What a handsome man!'

A smile blossomed on Lily's face when she noticed that the man walked toward her. 'This can't be Mister D! How young and handsome! His car must be worth at least millions!'

"Hi, Miss Lily. I'm Donoghue Dixon. I'm Mister D from your live stream." The man smiled as he

walked toward Lily. His well-manners left a good impression on Lily.

Lily was a little nervous when she shook hands with the man. "Hi, I'm Lily Lyndon. Just call me Lily."

Lily was not sure why she was so nervous.

She had grown up in a wealthy family, and she had met many excellent gentlemen.

However, it was her first time to meet someone as handsome and as well-mannered as Donoghue. She could not help but take a few more glances at him.

Donoghue did not keep his hand on Lily for long; he immediately let it go after the handshake. Lily's impression of him improved even more after that.

"Lily Lyndon. The Lily flower symbolizes purity and innocence; you have a great name." Donoghue smiled politely as he retrieved a delicate box. "Miss Lily, it is an honor to meet you. This is a gift for our first meeting."

Donoghue opened the box as he spoke.

The women nearby gasped and widened their eyes in disbelief; they almost screamed in jealousy!

There was a diamond ring in the box, and the diamond was the size of a pigeon's egg. It even emitted an enchanting light.

Any woman would go crazy for a diamond such as that!

"This—"

Lily was stunned, but the gesture touched her.

She had never received any silver accessory from Darryl throughout their three years of marriage, not to mention a diamond ring. 1

In comparison, Donoghue gave her a generous gift on their first meeting.

"This isn't appropriate; it's too expensive. I can't take this." Lily took a few seconds to calm herself before she replied softly as she bit her lips.

Donoghue gave her an assuring smile. "Why not? A diamond ring is worthless without a delicate hand, no matter how expensive it is."

Donoghue took Lily's hand as he spoke and carefully put the ring onto her finger.

Lily was a little reluctant, but she was overwhelmed with happiness when he put the diamond ring on her finger.

"Thank you," Lily said softly with her head lowered. She felt a little dizzy.

An indescribable emotion rippled through her. She

was nervous and excited at the same time.

Donoghue smiled. "You're welcome. Let's go; I have reserved a booth. We'll get some drinks."

Lily did not refuse him; she walked into the bar with Donoghue.

The bar lounge played some uptempo music, and there were many people on the dance floor.

Gorgeous waitresses in sexy bunny costumes walked around as they served drinks.

Young men and women moved their bodies to their hearts' content on the dance floor.

It was Lily's first time in a place like that, so she was a little nervous.

However, for some reason, she felt safe whenever she looked at Donoghue.

She was not sure why, but she felt safe with him.

A few waitresses bowed respectfully when they reached a luxurious booth on the first floor.

"Young Master Dixon."

Donoghue nodded in acknowledgment and led Lily to a seat; he even pulled the chair for her.

Lily's fondness for him got deeper. She had made the right decision to meet him.

"Donoghue, why did you donate so much money to me?" Lily asked.

"Do you believe in love at first sight?" Donoghue stared at her with a smile and took a sip of his drink. "Some people can decide to be with someone the moment they meet that person. I fell in love with you at first sight. You deserve all the money I gave you."

Lily was elated to hear those words.

Chapter 229

Dax Sanders and Nancy Lee gave each other astonished glances at the opposite booth on the first floor.

'What's happening? Why is Darryl's wife on a date with another man?'

Dax was cautious after Nancy's fortunate escape when someone attempted to kidnap her; he stayed with her all the time.

He brought Nancy to the bar that night because some housing developers had invited him. They were interested in a piece of land, but some stubborn residents had refused to move.

The developers wanted to ask for Dax's help to chase away those residents.

Dax did not expect to see Lily after his discussion with the developers.

"Is that really Darryl's wife?" Nancy furrowed her brows.

She was not sure because she did not have a clear vision; there was a glass between them.

Dax sighed and answered, "I'm sure. Look at her

Worship of Crystal; there are only two pairs of those in Donghai City."

Dax noticed that Lily was a little drunk. She got up from the couch and went to the washroom.

He saw Donoghue smile as he took a pack of white powder and poured it into Lily's glass.

Dax's face fell when he saw that.

'Is he trying to drug my friend's wife? Is he crazy?'

"Dear, stay here. I'm going to take a look," Dax said before he walked out of the booth hastily.

Nancy nodded.

There were not many who dared to challenge her husband in Donghai City, so she was confident that the man would leave as soon as Dax warned him.

Lily left the washroom and returned to the booth.

"Cheers! This is a joyous day, indeed." Donoghue smiled and raised his glass.

Lily nodded. She was not good at drinking, but she was in a good mood that day.

She raised her glass, toasted with Donoghue, and proceeded to take a sip.

A figure stormed into the booth at that exact moment and grabbed Lily's hand.

Splash!

Lily could not react in time, and she spilled her drink.

"Dax Sanders?"

Lily panicked when she saw Dax; she knew he was close to Darryl.

Then, she figured that her relationship with Darryl was already over, so she should not feel embarrassed about it.

Lily regained her composure and furrowed her thin brows. "Dax, what are you doing?"

"You can't drink this." Dax's tone was stern.

He fixed his gaze on Donoghue as he spoke.

Donoghue stared back at Dax silently.

It went on for a few seconds before Donoghue smiled. "My friend, who are you? What is going on?" His tone was calm without any hint of panic or anger.

Dax's gaze tensed.

'He is really something.'

An average person would be flustered when his plan to drug a girl was foiled.

Yet, he was exceptionally calm.

No man without an impressive background could be that composed because manners could not be faked.

"Who are you?" Dax asked him back.

The smile on Donoghue's face remained as he answered in a neutral tone, "My name's Donoghue Dixon."

Donoghue Dixon?

Dax had never heard of that name.

There were no families in Donghai City with the surname Dixon. That man had to be from an influential family; his acts did not seem like an average person at all.

There was a Dixon family in Jiangnan, not too far away from Donghai City. It was a place called Yunzhou City. The Dixons were a powerful patrician family; every single member of the Dixon family was a cultivator, and their influence was everywhere.

Perhaps...

Was Donoghue Dixon from that Dixon family?

Dax had to admit that the Dixon family had power. However, he must be crazy to hit on his friend's

wife!

Chapter 230

"I don't care who you are, but Lily is my friend's wife. I assure you that you would not be able to leave Donghai City in one piece if you put your hands on her."

Dax stared at Donoghue coldly. "How can you do something as despicable as drugging a woman?"

Donoghue maintained his smile; he still looked very calm.

On the other hand, Lily panicked and tried to explain. "Dax, there must be a misunderstanding. He's my friend; he won't do such a thing."

Donoghue was well-mannered, and he was a gentleman.

How could he have ill intentions toward her? It was impossible.

Dax looked at Lily earnestly. "Trust me. He isn't a good person."

Dax pointed at the broken glass on the floor. "I saw him slip drugs into your glass when you were in the washroom! He wanted to trick you! Come with me."

Dax gripped Lily's arm.

To Dax's surprise, Lily resisted and took a step back.

"Dax, I trust that Donoghue is a good man. I'm not a little girl. I know how to judge people. Please, mind your own business, and don't bother with mine."
Lily bit her lips.

Donoghue had lavished her with gifts during her live streams, and he even stood up for her when a hater spread nonsense about her on the internet.

How could he be a bad person?

Dax almost lost his patience.

'What the hell is wrong with Lily?'

She chose to trust a stranger than him, her husband's close friend?

Dax's tone became even firmer as he thought about that. "No, you need to come with me. Does Darryl know that you're meeting this guy?"

Darryl?

Lily felt conflicted when she heard his name.

She thought that Darryl was in prison somewhere after her family tricked him and chased him out of the family. She could not find him when she needed him the most, so she did not hold any hope for him anymore.

In comparison, Donoghue was so much better than her husband.

Lily lost her interest to explain herself when she thought about that. She walked toward Donoghue and turned herself away from Dax as she bit her lip.

Donoghue, who was silent, finally spoke in a soft voice, "Lily, is this Dax bothering you?"

Lily did not reply; she nodded silently.

All she wanted was for Dax to stop disturbing her and Donoghue; she wanted him to leave.

Donoghue nodded and smiled. "Alright, I'll get rid of him."

He clapped his hands once.

Swoosh.

Burly men in black attire immediately stormed into the booth and stared at Dax with a cold, menacing gaze.

'He called his men?'

Dax furrowed his brows and sneered, "You want to get your hands on me? Do you know who the f*ck am I? No one dares to be this brazen to me in the whole of Donghai City!"

Nancy rushed to the scene and shouted, "What the

hell is going on?"

'Does he not know who Dax is even though he is in Donghai City? How absurd!'

Donoghue maintained the smile on his face as he said to Dax, "I don't care who you are. This is my bar, and you are in my territory. You are the first person who dares to cause trouble here. I can't just let you off even if you are a god because you bothered Lily."

Donoghue raised his arm as he said that.

His men immediately moved toward Dax!

Indeed, Donoghue was the eldest son in the Dixon family, an influential family in Yunzhou city, the provincial capital!

When she realized that the men would fight with Dax, Lily was hesitant, but she chose to keep quiet. She bit her lips and turned the other direction as if she had nothing to do with all those people.

"How dare you!" Nancy was worried and angry at the same time.

"Dear, you should leave. Call the others," Dax said in a calm tone; there was no hint of fear on his face.

Nancy had encountered many situations when she was with Dax. She knew that she would not help if

she were to stay there; she might even bring more trouble to Dax. The smartest thing to do was to call for help.

The tension in the booth peaked. They were ready to confront each other at any moment.

Dax was not worried at all. He walked toward Lily and grasped her hand. "You have to come with me; you are Darryl's wife."

Lily flung Dax's arm away in annoyance. "I said that Donoghue is a good person. Stop bothering me!"

Chapter 231

“Lily, don’t worry. I’ll get rid of this pest immediately,” said Donoghue with a grin as he waved his hand. “Everyone, get him.”

In an instant, a dozen men pulled out their knives and rushed toward Dax!

Dax was horrified. He hastily pulled out an axe to defend himself.

However, how can one man defeat a dozen!?

Clash!

The whole room instantly fell into chaos.

Lily’s pretty face was full of distraught. She had never seen such a bloody scene before.

Donoghue smiled and comforted Lily. “Don’t be afraid, Lily. They’re just removing the pest, it’ll be fine soon.”

Slice!

A knife struck Dax on his back accompanied by a loud noise. His skin and flesh were torn apart as blood came gushing out!

“Gah!” Dax howled loudly in pain. Although he was

a battle-hardened man, he was no match against attacks from all sides!

Dax endured the pain, swung his axe, and knocked out two of those men.

However, half a dozen men started surrounding him again and relentlessly swung their knives at Dax.

Slice! Slice!

Dax's body was bloodied as he was struck countless times. Eventually, his vision faded, and he collapsed on the ground. It was unknown whether he was dead or alive.

Not long after, several men in black dragged Dax's bloodied body and tossed him out of the bar.

...

Meanwhile, Nancy continuously tried to call some numbers on her phone outside the bar.

She made dozens of calls yet none of them were answered. Eventually, she remembered Old Master Sanders was having a family meeting and all of Dax's men must be in the meeting.

Nancy was terribly worried. She suddenly thought of Darryl and immediately called him.

The call was answered soon enough.

“Darryl, come quick! Dax is in trouble!” Nancy had already shouted till her throat went sore before Darryl could react.

On the other side of the phone.

Darryl was lying and resting on his office sofa. He immediately got up when he heard those words. “What’s going on? Calm down and slowly tell me!”

“Come to Dynasty Bar, Dax had been attacked and is now unconscious!” Nancy cried out.

What?

Darryl instantly had a serious look on his face. He hung up the phone and quickly left his office.

It was 9pm and the employees of Platinum Corporation had left long ago. Darryl bumped into a man just as he exited the company’s main entrance.

However, the man remained still while Darryl almost fell from the impact.

Darryl was in a rush so he simply apologized and tried to go around the man.

At that moment, the man grabbed onto Darryl and said, “Is an apology enough for bumping into someone?”

The man’s tone of voice was peculiar and Darryl

lifted his head to take a look at him. The man was wearing a black trench coat and a cap with its brim positioned rather low. Darryl could not make out the face of this man.

“I’m sorry, I’ve got an emergency. You must be an employee here. I’ll give you a promotion tomorrow,” said Darryl as he tried to go around the man again.

The man chuckled faintly with no signs of allowing Darryl to pass.

Huh?

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows. “I’m in a rush, please excuse me.”

At that moment, Darryl felt an overpowering aura emanating from the man! Even though the man deliberately held back, it was still pretty strong.

“Move aside, I’m in a rush!” Darryl’s tone of voice had a hint of impatience as he was rushing to rescue Dax.

The man chuckled faintly again. “Don’t be so rash, my master is looking for you.”

“Master?” whispered Darryl to himself.

Darryl rejected the man without a second thought. “I’m not interested. I have important matters to

attend to.”

Darryl refused to entertain the man any further and left after finishing his words.

As Darryl was about to leave, the man immediately pulled a huge sack and covered Darryl’s entire body!

Motherf*cker, another sack!

The man proceeded to strike Darryl on the back of his head with his hand causing Darryl’s vision to spin and soon fainted.

Darryl did not know how long he was unconscious. All he knew was that he felt light-headed when he opened his eyes.

‘Which f*cker tied me up?’ Darryl’s eyes were red. Dax was struggling between life and death but Darryl was not there!

Chapter 232

Darryl furrowed his eyebrows and was promptly stunned after surveying his surroundings.

What was this place?

Darryl felt the continuous gusts of the sea breeze. He looked around and noticed he was on a small island surrounded by the ocean. What a scenic view.

A huge stone pillar over 150 feet tall stood not far from Darryl. Two large imposing words were elaborately carved on it—Elysian Island!

Elysian Island!?

‘Damn, this is Elysian Island?’

Darryl could not help but feel shocked.

Elysian Island was a man-made island situated not too far from Donghai City. It would take roughly three to four hours to reach here by boat.

The island was initially constructed to make use of marine resources, but the project was eventually abandoned for unknown reasons. This island was currently occupied by the Grandmaster Heaven Cult who turned it into their altar.

No one dared to enter Elysian Island unless they

had a death wish. The nearby fishermen avoided the island. There were some daring cultivators who wanted to explore the island but were never heard from again.

Truth be told, Elysian Island was truly a beautiful place accompanied by the gentle sea breeze. It was quite literally Heaven on Earth.

As Darryl was admiring the view, he noticed there were tons of exotic plants nearby!

Damn, there were Heaven Spiritual Herbs, Saint's Fungus, Three-lobed Mulberry Leaves, Bicolor Flower, and even... Monk's Blood Fruit...

These were all precious ingredients for refining pills and elixirs! If Darryl could harvest all these plants, then would he not be able to refine any pill he wanted!?

At that moment, a man wearing a black trench coat approached Darryl and dragged him along. "You're awake? Come with me."

Darryl knew he was the man who knocked him unconscious.

This man was incredibly strong and single-handedly pulled Darryl along. They took the stone steps ahead toward the plaza.

This plaza on the island was as big as eight football

fields.

Disciples of the Grandmaster Heaven Cult stood guard along both sides of the steps toward the plaza. The place was heavily guarded with disciples at every few steps.

These people were experts without a doubt. Any of them was at least as strong as Darryl!

The Grandmaster Heaven Cult has over a hundred thousand disciples all over the continent. However, only about 3,000 resided in Elysian Island's altar.

These 3,000 people were elite disciples with their ranks being at least a Level Four Master!

Darryl let the man drag him along while his eyes wandered about the surroundings. There was a magnificent cluster of buildings on a nearby hilltop as if it was a palace for the gods. This Grandmaster Heaven Cult's Altar was truly sophisticated.

Darryl was immediately dumbfounded when he arrived at the plaza!

There were over a thousand people lined up in neat rows at the plaza! In front of them was an ornate throne adorned with carvings of numerous dragons.

This Throne of Dragons was aged and appeared to be carved out from an entire block of rosewood!

This chair was worth millions!

A woman sat atop the throne. She seemed gentle and dignified with the temperament of a queen!

The 30-odd-years-old woman had a refined facial feature with the beauty of a goddess. She wore a light yellow dress which accentuated her voluptuous curves and had a simply alluring sense of divinity.

This woman was the Cult Mistress of Grandmaster Heaven Cult, Monica Vaughn.

Gulp.

Darryl was surprised to see her and could not help but swallow his saliva.

Darryl never thought he would meet such an exquisite beauty on Elysian Island.

“How dare you look directly at our cult mistress, on your knees!” As Darryl was still fascinated with Monica, a man approached him from behind and viciously kicked the back of his knees.

Darryl lost his balance and immediately knelt down.

Could the woman on the throne really be the Cult Mistress?

The Cult Master of Grandmaster Heaven Cult coddled his Cult Mistress. Therefore, meeting her was like meeting the Cult Master himself. She was

in control of more than a hundred thousand Grandmaster Heaven Cult disciples!

‘This is bad, I looked directly at the Cult Mistress. Am I going to get beheaded?’ thought Darryl anxiously.

Darryl had never felt so anxious in his entire life. He had some good personal connections at Donghai City so had always been able to solve any issues which came his way.

Conversely, Darryl was powerless now that he was on Elysian Island! His fate was in the hands of the Cult Mistress!

“Darryl, right?” said Monica slowly. Her tone of voice was gentle but with a hint of majesty.

Darryl rigidly nodded his head.

“Do you know why I invited you here today?” asked Monica as she stared at Darryl.

‘Invited me? Invited? Was knocking me out an invitation?’ thought Darryl with a wry smile.

At the same time, Darryl was afraid as he had previously practiced in private the Ascension of the Nine Dragons secret manual which was stolen from their Altar by Skyler.

Could it be the Cult Mistress had learned about the

truth and sent someone to deal with Darryl?

Chapter 233

Darryl was sweating at that thought. Practicing secret manuals in private was forbidden in the martial arts world. Darryl had no means of escape if that was truly the case.

Darryl was surrounded by thousands of disciples with each of them being the sect's cream of the crop such that not even a fly could escape.

“Don't worry, I'm not here to interrogate you. I just want you to verify a certain matter. Did you rescue a dozen or so ladies three days ago?” said Monica with a smile.

What?

Darryl's expression instantly froze as he was a little confused.

Darryl eventually recalled Chester had kidnapped about a dozen women and gave them to Darryl for his personal pleasure but Darryl released them.

“Do you know who those ladies are?” asked Monica in a gentle tone.

Darryl scratched his head and said, “Madam, I don't know their true identities. I only know they are

members of Grandmaster Heaven Cult. My first thought was to find a way to release them and guarantee their safety.”

“Good, good. You did well.” Monica nodded and praised Darryl. She looked at him with a beaming smile and continued, “Grandmaster Heaven Cult is destined for greatness if we have loyal disciples like you, therefore I invite you here today to reward you.”

‘Damn it, all this just to reward me? Their method of rewarding me is f*cking special. Tying me up in a sack and bringing me all the way here!?’ Darryl was unsure if he should laugh or cry.

At that moment, Monica raised her hand and a gentle wave of internal energy pulled Darryl’s and lifted him to stand upright.

“Those ladies are Oracle candidates for Grandmaster Heaven Cult,” said Monica.

The Oracle was a unique position in Grandmaster Heaven Cult as there could only be one at any time. That person must be proficient in the beliefs and ideologies of Grandmaster Heaven Cult whose main responsibilities were to spread the cult’s teachings and recruit new disciples.

The Oracle was considered Grandmaster Heaven Cult’s mascot. Their status was second only to the

cult master and mistress.

However, an Oracle had no real authority but was still highly respected by the cult's followers.

Darryl was delighted upon hearing that. Never did he imagine he would bumble his way into a great deed. It would have brought much dishonor to Elysian Island were those Oracle candidates violated.

The Oracle was the mascot for the Cult's disciples after all.

Thankfully Darryl did not succumb to his lust. Otherwise, today would be the end of him.

As Darryl internally rejoiced, Monica laughed and said, "You've done a great deed for us, and from what I've heard, Donghai City's Skyler Burr has relinquished his Hall Master position to you."

"However, the Hall Master position is unworthy for such a talented man like you."

Monica slowly raised her hand as she finished.

The servant girl beside Monica immediately walked in front of Darryl and bestowed him a jade slip.

Monica smiled and said softly, "I hereby declare from today onward, Darryl Darby is an Elder Master of Grandmaster Heaven Cult."

Wow.

Grandmaster Heaven Cult's Elder Master!?

Everyone at the plaza was in an uproar upon hearing Monica's words. Thousands of shocked eyes instantly focused on Darryl with admiration and envy.

Darryl was in disbelief as well. Elder Master?

This title was rather intimidating.

'Is this status very high?'

Darryl's mind was filled with questions as he held onto the purple jade slip.

It was well-known the hierarchy of Grandmaster Heaven Cult begins with the Cult Master and Cult Mistress at the top followed by Yin and Yang Messengers, Four Guardian Kings, and the Hall Masters.

However, there was one more position in the cult which was Elder Master.

The status of an Elder Master was second to the cult master and mistress. However, the Elder Master actually possessed real authority and power!

"Mistress, the position of Elder Master has been left vacant for so long because we couldn't find a suitable candidate. Although Darryl is talented, he's only a Level Four Master and simply not strong

enough. How could he be able to bear the responsibilities of an Elder Master? Please reconsider this, Mistress.”

At that moment, a burly man stood up from the side and said in a panic.

This burly man was the Black Tortoise—one of the Four Guardian Kings, Sheldon Schwarz.

He glanced at Darryl with contempt as he spoke.

Sheldon started as a mere disciple years ago and only after relentlessly working hard and achieving various accomplishments did he slowly arrive at the position of the Black Tortoise.

“You’re just a mere Hall Master. It’s unacceptable for you to rise through the ranks in an instant and become an Elder Master,” said Sheldon.

Several people around started voicing their opinions upon hearing Sheldon’s words.

“That’s right. Darryl’s power is only average. He won’t be able to handle such an important role!”

“True and he’s also too young and reckless. He needs more training!”

“Cult Mistress, please reconsider this!”

Thousands of people knelt down and prostrated.

Chapter 234

Monica sat atop her throne and smiled. “Are all of you doubting me?”

Monica’s voice was not loud, but could clearly be heard across the entire plaza as a powerful aura emanated from her body!

The Cult Mistress’s aura was truly powerful.

“No, Mistress. I dared not!”

Sheldon’s body trembled as he prostrated and repeatedly knocked his head against the ground before retreating to the side soon after.

Monica said slowly, “Darryl rescued the Oracle candidates and for this deed, he’s entirely worthy to be the Elder Master. The Cult Master and I have discussed this and come to this decision together. Darryl is a talented man and will be able to handle this huge responsibility.”

Everyone silenced themselves with none dared to speak another word.

Meanwhile, Darryl was thrilled beyond measure!

‘Haha, it seems the Elder Master position is rather high!’ thought Darryl.

“Darryl, stay here for today. The Cult Master is cultivating in seclusion and will finish within two days. You’ve been granted the Elder Master title, so we’ll be holding the Elder Master’s Banquet in your honor tonight. You cannot be absent,” said Monica slowly.

The Elder Master’s Banquet was held every time an Elder Master was chosen. It was also a way for the Elder Master to show off his recognition.

This was a tradition that could not be changed.

Darryl was unaware of this and simply smiled before saying, “This... I don’t want to trouble you for this.”

Darryl had been on Elysian Island for a long time while Dax’s condition was still unknown.

Darryl was really nervous and wanted to quickly return to Donghai City.

‘What?’

‘He doesn’t want to attend the banquet?’

The people around were instantly perplexed. They stared at Darryl like he was a fool.

Monica furrowed her eyebrows as well. “Darryl, you have to attend your own banquet as the Elder Master. It won’t be called the Elder Master’s

Banquet if the Elder Master himself was absent, right? This is the tradition of Grandmaster Heaven Cult, do you think it's a game?"

Darryl was terrified upon seeing Monica's expression.

It seemed Darryl could not afford to be absent for this banquet. Eventually, he relented and decided to stay for a night. He would take this opportunity to harvest the exotic plants on the island.

Darryl hastily replied after some thoughts. "Mistress, you're mistaken. I just thought I'm already receiving such great treatment for my first time here at the Altar and was momentarily taken aback when you would go as far as dedicating a banquet just for me. I've decided to swear my loyalty to Grandmaster Heaven Cult, the Cult Master and the Cult Mistress!"

Darryl was pleased with his own wittiness.

His reply was foolproof.

Monica's expression eased up a bit as she nodded her head. "The Cult Master and I are pleased to have your loyalty. All of you may take your leave then."

Monica slowly stood up after finishing her words. She turned and headed to the main hall behind her along with the support of her maids.

“Take care, Cult Mistress.”

Thousands of people at the plaza instantly knelt down and bid Monica farewell in unison. The power of their voices shook the entire plaza.

Darryl imitated them and knelt on the ground as he shouted alongside. However, his gaze was fixed upon Monica’s slender back.

Rumor has it that the Cult Master was over 60 years old, yet he was able to have such a gorgeous wife.

The Cult Master was truly a lucky man.

It was 8pm and the entire island was brightly illuminated to grandly celebrate Darryl’s Elder Master’s Banquet.

Fireworks lit up the entire island with several hundred women performing songs and dances. It was very pleasing to the eye.

Everyone eagerly toasted Darryl for his accomplishments during the banquet with each of them wanting to get close and butter him up since he was now the Elder Master after all.

Among the crowd’s toasting and cheering, Darryl did not forget to toast the Cult Mistress as well!

Even so, Darryl controlled his alcohol consumption and remained sober.

He planned to sneak out and harvest some herbs in secret once the banquet was over.

As the banquet ended at midnight, Darryl found an opportunity to slip away from the main hall and headed toward the seaside where those exotic plants grew.

After half an hour, Darryl left fully loaded as he had harvested quite a lot of spirit herbs. It was truly a bountiful harvest.

Darryl could refine tons of pills and elixirs with such a large amount of herbs!

Darryl's room was not far from the Cult Mistress's. He lightened his footsteps as he got closer to avoid alerting Monica. Stealing herbs was not a nice thing to do after all.

Darryl suddenly froze as he walked past Monica's room!

Moan...

A faint painful moaning could be heard periodically from Monica's room.

It was the Cult Mistress's voice!

Her voice resonated from her room with a kind of deadly allure which caused Darryl to feel the bones in his body weaken.

Chapter 235

Damn, what was the Cult Mistress doing in her room?

The noises she made...

Darryl could not hold back his curiosity and slowly approached the door.

Monica heard the packets of spiritual herbs rustling in Darryl's hands.

"Who's there? Come... Come in quickly," said Monica softly.

Darryl immediately swung open the door without any hesitation upon hearing her words.

Gasp.

Darryl gasped and was dumbfounded at what he saw in the room.

Monica wore a purple dress as she curled up on her bed in the aromatic room. Her body shivered incessantly and sweated profusely. She was clearly in a lot of pain!

What... What was going on?

Had the Heaven Cult Elixir activated in the Cult

Mistress?

Monica had the same appearance as Skyler before the toxin activated inside him.

All members of the Grandmaster Heaven Cult including the Cult Mistress must consume this elixir.

Monica was somewhat angry as she could feel Darryl's gaze on her body. No one in the cult was brazen enough to stare at her body.

However, Monica did not care for such matters now! Her life was on the line due to the toxin's activation!

Today was indeed the toxin's activation day for Monica. The Cult Master was the only one with the antidote for the Heaven Cult Elixir! However, he was currently cultivating in seclusion and no one dared to disturb him as any interruption during one's cultivation could easily cause them to have a psychotic break!

Monica opened her lips slightly and feebly spoke to Darryl, "Darryl... See if you can find the antidote in the box beside the bed."

Darryl walked over to the bedside and opened the wooden box but it was empty.

"There's nothing here, Mistress," said Darryl.

Monica felt hopeless in an instant!

Could this be her end?

Monica felt as though millions of ants were biting her body as she tossed and turned.

Darryl took a deep breath and smiled. “Mistress, don’t worry. I have the antidote.”

What?

Does Darryl have the antidote?

Monica’s body trembled as she looked at Darryl with disbelief. She was too weak to speak due to the toxin’s effects. However, those beautiful eyes reflected the anxiety within her.

Unbelievable!

The method for refining the Heaven Cult Elixir and its antidote had been kept secret by the Cult Masters for centuries. This was to ensure the cult’s disciples’ loyalty.

Not even the Cult Mistress knew about the method.

How would Darryl who just entered Elysian Island have the antidote?

Monica stared intensely at Darryl. Could he be lying in order to take advantage of the Cult Mistress?

Monica blushed, felt ashamed, and angry at that

thought.

Nonetheless, Darryl's next actions were beyond her expectations.

Darryl walked around the room, grabbed a porcelain pot, and lit a fire.

The main ingredient for the Heaven Cult Elixir's antidote was the Bicolor Flower which he had secretly harvested many of them just moments ago.

Monica was in pain and laid there in a stupor while being uncertain of Darryl's actions.

Was Darryl going to refine the antidote on the spot?

It was impossible!

At that moment, the persisted toxin effects had caused waves of immense pain toward Monica who ended up covered in sweat. She could no longer endure and tumbled onto the floor.

The effect of the Heaven Cult Elixir's toxin worsens as time goes by. The pain was initially bearable but it would eventually become too much to endure!

Darryl was distracted by Monica's struggles as he focused on refining the pill.

"Darryl, tie me up," said Monica softly. She was still conscious and was aware that Darryl was her last hope. She could not risk disturbing him!

Darryl nodded his head. It was true that pill refinement required complete concentration. He noticed there was a rope on the table and brought it toward Monica. “Mistress, please excuse me.”

Darryl tied Monica with the rope and also stuffed a silk scarf in her mouth as he spoke.

Monica’s screams were muffled as she cried out in pain.

Chapter 236

Half an hour later.

Darryl smiled and took the pill out of the porcelain pot.

The entire room was filled with the pill's sweet aroma.

Monica was stunned as she stared with disbelief at the pill in Darryl's hand!

Darryl walked toward Monica with a smile. 'Saving the Cult Mistress is yet another great deed by me. I can't wait to be rewarded! Haha!' thought Darryl. He removed the silk scarf from Monica's mouth and slowly placed the pill into her mouth.

Darryl stood at the side and waited patiently for the pill to take effect.

Monica gently closed her eyes. She initially had doubts, but felt the pain in her body slowly dissipate after a few seconds and was pleasantly surprised.

"Darryl, how did you know of the antidote's refinement method?" Monica asked in excitement.

At that moment, her body no longer felt any pains.

“I read it from an old book,” said Darryl plainly.

Monica praised Darryl and gave him a few looks. “Excellent! I wasn’t mistaken. You truly deserve the position of Elder Master. Speaking of which, I have an assignment for when you return to Donghai City.”

‘Damn, I saved your life and what I get is an assignment?’ Darryl thought.

Darryl was speechless but had no choice except replying with respect, “Just say the word, Mistress. I’ll do my best.”

Monica said slowly, “I received news the Six Orthodox Sects are planning to set up a cultivation school called the Hexad School with the purpose of developing excellent disciples for their six sects.”

“They want to set up a cultivation school? Why haven’t I heard of this?” Darryl asked.

“This school will be established in two days. Of course, you wouldn’t know as I receive this information in advance,” replied Monica.

So they were still in preparation.

Darryl nodded his head but was internally surprised.

The average joe was still unaware of cultivation and the establishment of such a school would agitate

the entire of Donghai City.

Monica continued, “Many rich children from Donghai City will definitely register to join the school upon its establishment. When the time comes, find a way to join the school and bring me a book titled Supreme Mystery Scripture.”

Supreme Mystery Scripture?

Darryl was stunned and asked with a frown, “Mistress, how can I find that in such a large school?”

Monica smiled and said, “I’ve looked into it. The school principal is Graham Potter from Wudang Sect. The Supreme Mystery Scripture should be with him. You need to think of a way to steal it.”

Damn it.

One must be really powerful to hold the principal role. Darryl had no choice but to agree with this assignment. “Mistress, don’t worry. I’ll be sure to accomplish this mission.”

Darryl could not help but look at the Cult Mistress as he spoke.

Monica stared at him. “Do loosen the bindings on me.”

“Right!” Darryl quickly went over and loosen the

rope on Monica.

Darryl struggled for a long time but still could not loosen the rope. He was panicking when tying her up earlier and had accidentally tied too tightly.

Darryl became anxious as he could not loosen the rope no matter what he did.

Darryl's body trembled when he attempted to untie the rope.

Monica was embarrassed and her body shivered as her beautiful face started heating up.

Monica was known as the Cult Mistress and the Cult Master's wife, but they never had an intimate relationship.

The Cult Master was over 60 years old and was far too old for such intimacy.

Another reason was that the Cult Master devoted himself to cultivation and had no desires for carnal pleasures.

Everyone held Monica in high regard as the Cult Mistress and no man dared to get close to her.

Darryl was the first and only exception.

Monica felt a throbbing in her heart unlike ever before.

However, she softly said, "It's fine if you can't

loosen it. There's a pair of scissors in the drawer. Use it to cut the rope."

Darryl acknowledged her, quickly went over to the drawer and opened it. There was indeed a pair of scissors inside.

Hmm?

What was this?

There was a peculiar-looking ginseng beside the pair of scissors. The ginseng was entirely aquamarine and radiated a mesmerizing light.

The colors of ginseng were usually yellow or white.

Even the rare blood ginseng was red.

Why would there be a green one?

Chapter 237

“Mistress, what’s this?” Darryl grabbed the green ginseng and asked curiously.

Monica looked at it and said, “It’s called the Jasper Ginseng. It’s a type of rare ginseng that can increase a cultivator’s power. The Cult Master gave it to me.”

Monica smiled and continued, “I shall bestow this ginseng to you as a reward for saving my life.”

Darryl was full of excitement. His power was at the rank of Level Four Master.

He would first ascend to Level Five Master after consuming the ginseng then ascend to the rank of Master General by consuming the Godly Pill.

‘Haha, that’s perfect!’ thought Darryl. He was incredibly delighted and immediately ate the entire ginseng without a second thought.

“Did you just eat the entire thing?”

Monica was stunned with a worried look on her face. “The effect of this ginseng is very potent. You can’t directly eat it. You have to steep it in boiling water and only drink the solution once a month.”

What?

It was meant to be steeped?

“Mistress, you should’ve told me this earlier!”

Darryl cried out! Darryl could have stopped even if Monica mentioned it two seconds before!

Darryl was concerned. “Mistress, what’s gonna happen to me since I’ve eaten the whole thing?”

Was Darryl going to die?

‘Please be anything but death!’ thought Darryl.

Monica shook her head with uncertainty. “I don’t know either. No one has ever consumed the Jasper Ginseng in such a manner.”

Darryl sighed. He tried to ignore this matter and focused on freeing the Cult Mistress.

Darryl grabbed the scissors and walked toward Monica. Suddenly, he felt that his entire body was extremely cold as he arrived next to Monica. It was as if he was tossed into a freezer!

“It’s so cold!”

Darryl shivered as a layer of ice started forming on his hair!

This was without a doubt the effect of misusing the ginseng!

The Jasper Ginseng was an extremely potent spiritual herb. It was meant to be steeped into a solution but Darryl ate it whole. The latent power within the ginseng was instantly released into Darryl's body. It was impossible for him to bear it!

"It's so cold, so cold!"

Darryl shivered continuously, but the cold feelings soon rapidly receded only to be replaced by an indescribable burning sensation.

Darryl now felt as if his entire body was set ablaze!

"Agh!"

At this moment, Darryl felt like he was being incinerated! The painful burning sensations caused him to yell and roll on the floor.

"Mistress, what's going on? It's hot, so, so hot!" Darryl exclaimed.

"I... I'm afraid you're going to have a psychotic break," replied Monica with a frown.

What?

Psychotic break?

Darryl was stunned and felt completely hopeless upon hearing those words.

A psychotic break was a cultivator's greatest fear!

Countless legendary cultivators had died because of a psychotic break!

“This feels unbearable!” Darryl uncontrollably rolled on the ground in pain! He could feel his body heating up and immediately took his clothes off as he felt like he was going to catch on fire.

“Darryl, what are you...” Monica’s beautiful face instantly blushed.

Darryl suddenly looked at her after hearing her voice!

“I feel so hot, it’s like I’m burning!” roared Darryl as he felt a fire slowly building up in his energy field! The immense heat caused his mind to go blank.

Darryl stared at the Cult Mistress and pounced on her in a flash!

“Darryl, keep yourself together. I’m the Cult Mistress, how dare you behave so crudely!”

Rip!

Darryl ignored her words and simply tore off her long dress.

Monica was still tied up and could not fight back. At that moment, Darryl’s lips kissed her without any warning.

“Mmph!” Monica could not help but make a sound as she tightly bit her lips.

...

Donghai City.

Lily had just finished streaming and dressed up in preparation to head out. Her best friend had called her earlier and invited her out shopping.

Although the weather outside was great, Lily’s mood was not.

Dax was badly injured in the incident last night at Dynasty Bar when his men rushed to the scene.

Donoghue had Lily leave first as the situation was in complete chaos.

Chapter 238

Dax was one of the prominent figures in Donghai City. Donoghue could be in big trouble for offending him since his condition was still unknown.

Lily was worried ever since last night's incident.

Donoghue was absent in Lily's previous live-streaming session as well. ①

'Could it be that something bad happened to him?'

Lily's mind was filled with worrying thoughts.

Ding ding.

Lily's phone suddenly beeped at that moment.

She took out her phone and was instantly joyous upon seeing a text message from Donoghue.

He merely sent a short sentence. [Lily, I hope you weren't terrified of yesterday's incident?] Even his demeanor through text was gentlemanly.

Lily felt an unexplainable sense of relief as her mood lightened upon reading Donoghue's text.

She deduced from the text that Donoghue was safe from last night's incident.

Lily hastily replied, [I'm alright. How about you? Dax is a powerful man in Donghai City. He'll never let you off easily for beating him up like that. You must be careful.]

Donoghue grinned on the other side of the phone. [Don't worry. Even though Dax is a powerful man, he's never a threat to me. He has no chance of hurting me, don't worry.]

Lily was relieved at his reply.

At that moment, Donoghue sent another message. [Lily, we were so rudely interrupted by that pesky Dax last night. How about we hang out at Dynasty Bar again tonight? I don't know why, but I feel delighted when you're around. I feel worry-free whenever I'm with you.]

There was even a smiley face at the end of the message.

Lily felt an indescribable sweetness in her heart upon reading his message.

Donoghue was well-mannered and knew how to flatter. Not to mention he was rich and handsome. How was it possible for a man to have all those traits?

'How could any girl not fall for such an excellent man?' Lily thought.

[Sure, see you tonight,] replied Lily without any hesitation.

...

Donghai City First Hospital.

Hundreds of burly men stood menacingly at the second-floor inpatient department! All of them had an unrestrained angered expression with murderous auras emanating from their bodies. Their presence had crammed up the entire second floor.

Those men were Dax's subordinates.

No one dared to move about on the second floor. Even doctors and nurses were afraid of speaking up. Anyone would be scared in the presence of so many burly men.

These burly men were led by an old man wearing a white tang suit. The old man's expression was filled with worry.

This old man was none other than Dax's grandfather, Saul.

Saul had been at the suburbs manor due to the great atmosphere there as he spent his time gardening and fiddling with antiques.

Saul was shocked and angered upon hearing news

of Dax's assault and rushed to the hospital the night before.

Dax was still in his life-saving surgery even till now.

Meanwhile, Saul was worried and angry.

Saul had struggled and worked hard many years ago in Donghai City and made a name for the Sanders family with his own two hands. He was revered by every prominent family in Donghai City with the utmost respect.

However, someone went as far as to hurt his precious grandson! It was simply unacceptable for Saul!

Nancy's face was stained with tear marks as she sat dejectedly on a chair beside him.

Her heart shattered at the sight of Dax's bloodied body the previous night.

A dozen of Dax's men eventually arrived and were about to storm Dynasty Bar last night. However, they did not expect over a hundred of Donoghue's men to rush out against them.

It was without a doubt, Dax's men were ultimately defeated and badly injured after a chaotic battle and they were staying at the hospital as well.

Nancy prayed that her husband would be alright.

He must recover.

At that moment, the operating room door opened as Shelly came out wearing a white coat.

Shelly performed this surgery herself as she knew Dax and Darryl were close friends.

The whole operation took roughly seven hours from last night till now.

Shelly was completely exhausted with her forehead covered with sweat. It was hard for anyone to endure such a long operation.

“Chief Shelly, how’s Dax?”

“How’s my grandson?”

Saul and Nancy immediately approached Shelly. Their words were different but they shared the same worried tone.

Shelly sighed and hesitated before speaking. “His condition isn’t good, there’s no guarantee he’ll survive. Even if he could stay alive, it’s possible he would be disabled...”

In truth, Shelly had been a doctor for so many years and never seen someone so badly injured.

Dax was cut a total of 36 times with his entire body covered in wounds. His flesh was disfigured and

even the muscles in his arms and legs were torn. The entire operating table was stained red with his blood.

Chapter 239

A young nurse who entered the operating room for the first time was frightened to tears upon seeing Dax's condition.

The average joe would not have survived the journey to the hospital with such injuries.

Shelly was distraught, but at the same time found it hard not to admire Dax's tenacious perseverance.

Dax could not be sedated due to the wounds on his body. However, he did not make a single sound during the seven-hour long operation and was conscious all the way through. He finally could not hang on any longer and fainted after the operation was completed.

Saul was shocked and his eyes instantly became bloodshot upon hearing Shelly's words.

'Dax is the Sanders family's sole heir! Do you intend to end our family? Donoghue Dixon, I'll make your family pay with blood!' Saul thought.

This was no longer a mere grudge.

It was now a blood feud!

"Old Master, Madam, something bad has

happened!” At that moment, a younger member of the family ran panicky toward Saul and Nancy.

Saul scolded him, “What’s all the fuss? How rude of you to be making so much noise. What’s the matter?”

The young man panted heavily. “Old Master, Donoghue brought his men and took over Dax Street.”

What?

Donghai City’s Dax Street was named after Dax Sanders. This was because 90% of the shops along that street were the Sanders family’s property.

Among those shops included hotels, KTV, bars, internet cafes, and billiard halls who would punctually pay the Sanders family a monthly protection fee.

Donoghue had not just injured Dax. He even took over the entire Dax Street, which was equivalent to severing the Sanders’ wealth source!

Saul’s body trembled with his eyes filled with fiery rage! He clenched his fist and viciously punched the wall. “Yunzhou City’s Dixon family, there won’t be peace as long as either of us is standing.”

Wow.

Saul had punched a big hole into the concrete wall

which was accompanied by a violent shockwave.

The surrounding hospital staff were rendered speechless and held their breaths upon seeing that sight.

“Does he think there’s no one left in the Sanders family?” Nancy stepped up with a cold expression on her face. “All of you follow me, we won’t rest until Donoghue is dead!”

Nancy was going to bring her men and leave as soon as she finished her words.

“Nancy, don’t be rash.”

However, Saul pulled her back at that moment.

Nancy halted her steps and trembled. “Grandpa. Dax and many of our comrades are injured because of the Dixons, and now they dare take over our territory. I won’t stand for this!”

Saul nodded his head. “I know. We’ll have our revenge, but the Dixons are too powerful right now. We won’t be able to defeat them directly. Let’s return home and discuss a proper plan.”

...

Elysian Island.

Darryl slowly regained his consciousness.

Level Five Master!

Darryl took a deep breath. It seemed the Jasper Ginseng was truly effective! Darryl almost had a psychotic break as he had incorrectly consumed the ginseng was luckily fine now.

Darryl was thrilled but immediately turned shocked when he felt something below him.

Oh, no.

There was still a trace of blush on Monica's face as she stared intensely at Darryl from underneath him. She was angry, ashamed, and perplexed.

Darryl was screwed now.

Cold sweat instantly streamed down Darryl's head as he realized might have violated the Cult Mistress. He was totally screwed now!

Darryl's mind instantly went blank!

"Mistress, I..."

Monica interrupted him before he could say another word. "Darryl, can you please get up?"

Monica blushed again as she spoke.

Monica was the high and mighty Cult Mistress, and this brat had the guts to commit such blasphemy against her. Truly asking for his own demise.

Monica had been married to the Cult Master for

many years now. Even though the Cult Master was old, Monica was still quite well and youthful!

“Mistress, I...” Darryl returned to his senses and clumsily stood back up.

“Cut this rope now,” said Monica without any expression.

Chapter 240

Darryl immediately put on his clothes, grabbed the scissors, and cut the rope.

Monica did not say a word and quickly went aside to dress up.

Darryl stood at the side in a reserved manner like a child who made a huge mistake.

At that moment, the atmosphere in the room was tense and a little delicate.

Monica bit her lip tightly after putting on her clothes. "Darryl, I'll act as if nothing happened today, but if I find out you've let this leak... I'll kill your entire family."

What would people think if they knew the Cult Mistress had an inappropriate relationship with her subordinate?

Monica wanted to kill Darryl, but alas he did save her life.

"Don't worry, Mistress. I won't say a word about it." Darryl quickly nodded his head and maintained a serious expression.

Phew.

Darryl was thankful that Monica did not change her mind. If not he would be buried on Elysian Island tonight.

Monica did not say another word and returned to the Cult Mistress's usual demeanor and waved her hand at Darryl. "That will be all. It's getting late, you should return to your room and rest."

"As you command, Mistress," Darryl replied and hastily retreated to his room.

As Darryl laid on the bed, he could not help but recall the scenario that had just happened.

Perhaps due to exhaustion, he fell asleep soon enough.

Darryl slept soundly that night.

The next morning.

"Hooah!"

Darryl was awakened by a series of loud yellings as he drowsily opened his eyes and looked across the window. He could hear the cult disciples practicing at the plaza not far from here. They were shouting their battle cry uniformly and thunderously.

'Damn, I can't sleep because of this early morning training,' thought Darryl.

Truth be told, these elite disciples were really

diligent.

Darryl stretched his body and got out of bed.

At that moment, Monica suddenly opened the door and came into his room.

Her beautiful face remained as calm as ever.

It was as if nothing happened the previous night.

Damn it.

Why was the Cult Mistress here?

Darryl started to worry upon seeing her in his room.

He was afraid this woman was coming over to silence him forever.

Monica wore a long purple dress today which accentuated her beautiful figure while further increasing her magnificence at the same time.

Her appearance was mesmerizing and utterly alluring.

Darryl looked at Monica for a brief moment before retracting his gaze as he dared not be too presumptuous. He slowly said, "What brings Mistress here so early today?"

Monica slowly walked toward the chair and sat down. "Darryl, let me remind you that you shall bring what happened last night to your grave.

Otherwise, everyone related to you will die. Do you understand?”

“Yes, absolutely. Mistress, don’t worry. You have my word,” said Darryl as he obediently nodded.

Monica nodded her head in satisfaction upon hearing Darryl’s reply as her voice had somewhat calmed down. “Another thing, don’t forget the assignment I gave you yesterday. When you return to Donghai City, do everything you can to get that scripture for me.”

“As you command.” Darryl nodded his head but felt internally helpless and dejected.

Stealing a scripture was easier said than done.

Monica mentioned that the person serving as Hexad School’s principal was an expert from Wudang Sect.

Darryl was merely a Level Five Master. Their difference in power was far too vast which made success chances way too slim. Moreover, Darryl had lived for over 20 years and had not stolen anything besides the phone that one time.

Monica laughed and pulled out an ancient book.

“I’m aware this might prove to be a difficult assignment for you, so I’ve decided to give you this book. Perhaps you’ll be able to steal the scripture

once you've read this book," said Monica softly as she handed the book over to Darryl.

What was this?

A secret martial arts manual?

Darryl received the book in excitement. On the yellowing cover were two bold and simple words 'Shadow Skills'.

Shadow Skills?

This book had quite an interesting title. Could it be another unique secret manual like Ascension of the Nine Dragons?

Chapter 241

“Madam, is this ‘Shadow Skill’ cool?!” Darryl asked excitedly.

Monica answered with a smile. “This is a memoir to be exact.”

Huh? A memoir?

Darryl’s face stiffened with confusion. Was she kidding? How was a memoir supposed to help him steal the scripture?

Meanwhile, Monica calmly explained, “Eight hundred years ago we had a Heaven Cult’s follower who earned the title of First-Ranked Godly Thief during the Song Dynasty. He was gifted with a pair of skillful hands that enabled him to steal from anyone he pleased without being noticed.”

At this moment, Darryl had already understood what the memoir was about. It was this thief’s memoir. According to Monica, this thief who was able to earn the title of Godly Thief must be very skilled.

“What happened then?” Darryl was excited and wanted to know more.

Monica poured herself a cup of tea. She continued

after a sip. “He would get anything he set his eyes on. Back then, there was a famous incident when all the treasures in the palace were stolen overnight. It was done by this Godly Thief.”

‘Damn! That’s so awesome!’ Darryl was amused. When he was learning antique appraisement during his primary school years, he was also interested in history and had learned about this palace incident from books. He knew the palace guards back then were very skilled, so for anyone to not be noticed by those palace guards was something unachievable. However, the Godly Thief managed to do so without anyone noticing.

Monica continued. “A Godly Police had started chasing after the Godly Thief due to the numerous committed crimes by him, but the Godly Police had been unable to catch him after many years. Coincidentally, the Godly Thief fell in love with the Godly Police’s daughter.”

Though, he didn’t know that girl was the Godly Police’s daughter. One day, the Godly Thief was stealing from a rich merchant house and the Godly Police who knew beforehand had waited for him in the house. Unfortunately, he accidentally killed the Godly Police when the Godly Thief tried to escape.”

It wasn’t until later when he visited the girl that he discovered he had killed his future father-in-law.

The girl could not take any revenge on him as she loved the Godly Thief so much and died two years later.”

After losing the girl, the Godly Thief suffered in agony and swore to God he was never going to steal again. However, he did not want his skills to vanish in the world, so he decided to compile his experiences and knowledge into his memoir.”

This memoir was kept by Grandmasters since then. One year ago, our Grandmaster was afraid I would get bored on this island, so he gave me this memoir.”

With that, Monica smilingly said, “Now, I’ll hand it to you. I hope it’ll help you in the future and it’s up to you how much you’ll gain from this memoir.”

“Thank you, Madam!” Darryl answered calmly while his heart pumped excitedly.

There was such a beautiful and touching love story behind this memoir.

“Alright, this memoir is now yours. Go home and study it,” said Monica whose heart fluttered slightly as she suddenly recalled what happened last night. A pink blush appeared on her face.

Darryl nodded.

Around ten minutes later, Monica arranged for a

boat to send Darryl back to Donghai City.

‘Haha... I’m finally back! Damn, it wasn’t easy at all!’
Thought Darryl as he laid on the boat languidly while enjoying the sea breeze with an eased feeling.

The Heaven Cult Island was beautiful with an amazing view despite making Darryl feel trapped somehow. However, he did gain some benefits from his island trip. With that in mind, he felt happy as he had taken away some spiritual herbs with him on top of having a good time with Monica.

‘Oh, the Godly Pill.’

He suddenly recalled he was now a Level Five Master and excitedly took out a Godly Pill before ingesting it.

Gulp.

He put the pill into his mouth without hesitation and sat still with anticipation.

Bam!

A strong current erupted from his energy field half an hour later. As he opened his eyes, two rays of bright light shone from his eyes.

Chapter 242

Aha! Success!

Level One Master General!

Darryl felt his body filled with energy and could not restrain himself from laughing joyously.

...

Donghai City First Hospital.

Darryl took a taxi here and immediately marched into the lobby. He received more than ten missed calls from Dax Sanders when he first arrived at the hospital. When Darryl finally picked up, it was Nancy who called. Her voice was hoarse from crying which caused Darryl to be extremely furious when he heard Dax was severely wounded.

When he entered Dax's ward, Dax was bandaged all over his body with fresh blood still seething through. He looked like a mummy with only a pair of eyes showing.

“Dax!”

His eyes turned red when Darryl saw him. “Dax, I'm so sorry for being late. I'm so sorry...” Darryl was feeling extremely guilty as tears uncontrollably

kept rolling down his cheeks. He felt as if his own heart was stabbed.

Dax had regained his consciousness by then. The doctor said his life was saved, but he might have to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair.

“Darryl, I’m not even dead. Why are you even crying?” Dax muttered weakly as he blinked his eyes.

“Of course I’m not crying! Get well soon!” Darryl wiped his tears and refuted with a faint smile. He then turned to Nancy and asked, “What exactly happened? Who hurt Dax?”

Nancy pulled Darryl out of the ward and said, “Yesterday evening, Dax and I saw your wife went on a date with another man. We saw that man tried to drug your wife and Dax tried to stop.”

What!?

Darryl was extremely vexed. Darryl stood there transfixed with anger as his entire body trembled after listening to what Nancy had said.

Dax was wounded, because of Lily!?

Was she not live-streaming? Why was she dating another man? At this instant, Darryl was overwhelmed with not only anger but also guilt.

Argh!

Darryl took a deep breath and immediately called Lily.

The call was picked up not long after. It was quite noisy at the other end of the call as Lily was probably out shopping. This further agitated Darryl just like adding oil to burning flames.

“Where are you?” Darryl tried to restrain his anger.

Lily answered coldly, “Shopping. Why do you call?” She was still angry at him for asking her to leave when she and Samantha visited Darryl’s father at the hospital.

Darryl sneered, “Shopping? Who with?”

Darryl’s tone offended Lily as she answered with an annoyed tone, “Who are you to ask? The first thing you do after getting out of prison is to harass me.”

“I’m asking you now, what happened last night?” Darryl’s anger was slowly getting out of control and started yelling, “Do you know Dax was severely injured because of you!? He almost lost his life because of you! Now he has to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair all thanks to you!”

Darryl almost howled his last sentence.

“Darryl Darby! Why are you yelling at me!” At the other end of the call, Lily was getting more furious

as her cheeks reddened. “I was just meeting a fan of mine, but Dax decided to be a busybody and ruined our meeting. Who can be blamed for his injury?”

Busybody?

Hah!

Darryl laughed mockingly. “Busybody!? Hah! I’m intrigued this came out of your mouth! Tell me, who’s that fan of yours?”

“His name is Donoghue. He’s handsome, rich, and a gentleman. He sends me gifts every day. Darryl, stop bothering me!” Lily yelled to her phone.

Lily was extremely furious at this moment.

Darryl was trembling with anger too of course. He threatened with an eerily cold and emotionless tone, “I’m telling you now, Lily Lyndon. I’ll never forgive you if Dax actually becomes disabled.”

Beep.

Darryl hung up the phone with bloodshot reddened eyes while his body exuded a horrific air.

Lily was trembling with anger on the other end of the call. Her face had flushed red. Darryl was being unreasonable! 1

Chapter 243

Lily felt wrongly accused. This was the first time Darryl yelled at her in their three-year marriage. Had she done anything wrong? Dax was injured because he was being a busybody! Why did Darryl blame her? Lily was feeling utterly disappointed at Darryl.

On the other side, Darryl kept his phone and marched out of the hospital.

Nancy sensed something was wrong and followed up swiftly. “Darryl, what are you doing?”

“I’m going to avenge Dax.”

This was caused by Lily who was still legally his wife. How was he still a man if he did not even avenge Dax?!

Nancy panicked and held on to Darryl’s hand. “Please calm down, Donoghue is from Yunzhou City’s Dixon family. They are a strong cultivation family. If you go now it might as well be suicide. Please calm down.”

Dixon family from Yunzhou City!

Darryl smiled and patted on Nancy’s shoulder

reassuringly. “Don’t worry, just help me take good care of Dax. I don’t care who this guy is, I only know he will be stabbed ten times the amount he stabbed Dax!”

Darryl gently loosened his wrist from Nancy’s grip and marched away after saying that.

“Darryl, you...” Nancy stood at the spot transfixed with her heart uneasily pumping fast.

Darryl had such a righteous spirit! Dax was not wrong to have called this man his brother! One was fortunate to have someone like Darryl as his brother. However, one still had to be logical! Nancy stumped on her feet.

After Darryl got out of the hospital, he immediately phoned Caelan. Caelan was still an ordinary disciple of Eternal Life Palace Sect until two days ago until he had been appointed as the Vice Hall Master by Darryl. When Darryl was not around, all those other disciples had to obey Caelan since then.

“Hall Master,” Caelan greeted as he picked up the phone.

“Gather all the disciples,” Darryl instructed with a deadline look.

“Yes, Hall Master!”

...

Dynasty Bar, 8pm in the evening.

Inside the bar's most luxurious VIP room, Donoghue was dressed in a white suit and looking more charming than he was yesterday. A skinny middle-aged man sat beside him and both men were chatting joyfully.

Lily was sitting by the side. Although she had a smile on her face, she appeared more restrained, unlike yesterday. She wanted to talk privately with Donoghue, but this middle-aged man decided to be a third wheel and made Lily uncomfortable. The man was also looking at Lily with his perverted gaze lingering on her body without any respect which only made her feel disgusted.

Meanwhile, Donoghue laughed, stood up, and raised his glass. "Haha, it's my pleasure to have Mister Larson here today, haha! Let's have a great night tonight!"

This middle-aged man was Galvin Larson—a high-ranking Elder of Kunlun Sect and Donoghue's good friend. Recently, Donoghue heard the Kunlun Sect had an elixir which accelerated one's cultivation process. It was known as the 'Accelerating Pill.' Donoghue immediately contacted Galvin and asked for the elixir in order to accelerate his family's cultivation speed.

Galvin nodded with a smile. “Donoghue is right! After so many years of our friendship, we must get drunk tonight!” With that said, Galvin glanced at Lily who was sitting by the side as he continued smilingly. “I’ve been cultivating away in the forest for most of my time and haven’t seen you for years! Tonight, I see a beautiful lady is accompanying you.”

Donoghue smiled. “Oh Mister Larson, if you’re willing to provide me with the Accelerating Pill, I’ll provide you with gorgeous ladies!”

“Haha! Sounds like a good deal, haha—” Galvin laughed as he took a sip of the wine with his lustful and desire-filled gaze lingered on Lily again.

Lily felt uneasy under his lingering gaze. She stood up and whispered to Donoghue, “I’ll go to the restroom if you’d excuse me.” She then stumped out of the room in her heels.

Galvin said as she left the room, “Donoghue, I’ll be blunt with you. I want this woman.”

Galvin was known to be a disgusting pervert. He wanted to try her out even if that meant taking a few years of his life away when he saw Lily earlier.

Donoghue sighed. “Mister Larson, I’ve got plenty of gorgeous women. Does it have to be her...”

Galvin did not let him finish. “No! I only want her. If I can’t get her today, forget about the Accelerating Pill.”

Chapter 244

Donoghue let out a sigh as he thought. ‘Damn it, I just got Lily for myself and haven’t even tried her out yet. Now, I’ll have to give her away?’

In order to get hold of the Accelerating Pill, he had no choice but to sell Lily out. “Alright, Lily Lyndon is yours!”

“Not bad, not bad. You’re a smart man. Once I get hold of this woman, you’ll get hold of the Accelerating Pill. That woman is comparable to those celebrities with such fair skin and sexy body!” Galvin reassured with a lustful smile.

Donoghue nodded. “Of course, Lily is a famous anchor who I’ve spent quite a fortune trying to ask her out. She’s yours if she pleases you!”

Donoghue took out a small packet of white powder and sprinkled it into Lily’s drink upon saying that.

...

A narrow alley opposite Dynasty Bar was filled by a bunch of men dressed in black.

More than two hundred Eternal Life Palace Sect disciples gathered here while being led by a burly

man—the Vice Hall Master, Caelan.

Meanwhile, an Audi R8 pulled over by the alley and Darryl emotionlessly walked out from the car.

“Hall Master, everyone’s here.” Caelan walked over and reported to him with respect.

Darryl nodded. “Very well, you’ll wait for me here. I’ll signal you when it’s time,” Darryl instructed as he was unsure of the situation inside the bar.

Darryl strode into the Dynasty Bar after saying that. This new bar was opened a few days ago, hence it was filled with people. The dance floor was crowded with dancing men and women, alternating lights, and loud music blasting from the speakers. Darryl looked around but could not find Lily, so he went on to the second floor.

Meanwhile, Lily was being pressured by Donoghue to drink the wine which he drugged when she was away. Her face instantly turned red once she finished the glass of wine a strong wave of helplessness followed suit.

It was strange. Although she was not a drinker, she did not usually get drunk from just one glass of wine. Lily bit her lips while trying to stay conscious.

However, Galvin sat down next to her when he noticed she was about to pass out and started

playing with her hair. “Oh my pretty lady, are you drunk already?”

“Get your filthy hands off me!” Lily scowled with her face filled with disgust.

Galvin became more excited instead of removing his hand and started touching her face. “Tsk tsk tsk, my girl is so feisty, I like it! Haha! So domineering, I really like it!”

“You!” Lily was disgusted and wanted to push him away but realized she had no energy left to resist.

Her hands and legs were getting heavier such that she could not even raise her arm! What just happened?

“Donoghue, please ask him to leave me alone!” Lily yelled.

However, Donoghue seemed unperturbed while sitting by the side and shook his head. “Oh, Lily. Why don’t you spend a night with him?”

What!?

Lily thought she was hallucinating and stared at Donoghue without blinking. “What are you saying!”

Donoghue repeated himself. “I’m saying, why don’t you spend a night with him? I’ve drugged your drink earlier, so you can’t feel your legs and hands.

Lily, spend a night with him and I'll pay you twenty million bucks after this.”

“What!? How dare you!?” Lily yelled with disbelief and wanted to immediately leave, but she could not feel her legs nor her hands.

Galvin already had Lily in his arms by then with his hands groping her waist. He took a sniff of her and said, “Haha! My girl smells so good! Come here, let me kiss you.”

“Go away! Go away!” Lily yelled through her gritted teeth with her remorseful face.

She should not have trusted Donoghue, but it was too late now.

Galvin's lips almost touched Lily's as she shut her eyes in despair with tears started rolling out of her eyes.

Suddenly, a man rushed into the room and pushed Galvin away.

Darryl grabbed Lily's hand and questioned with a dark voice, “What are you doing here?”

Lily was surprised to see Darryl while her tears uncontrollably rolled down her cheeks. “I... Darryl, please bring me home... Bring me home...”

Chapter 245

Darryl's face darkened as he pulled on Lily's hand, ready to bring her away.

Meanwhile, Donoghue stood up with a smile while judging Darryl from head to toe. "Who are you? Who gave you permission to enter? Get out!"

Get out?

Darryl laughed coldly while exuding an air of eeriness as he glared at Donoghue. "You must be Donoghue?"

Donoghue replied with a smile, "That's me! The Dax guy from last night must've been a friend of yours? I've kicked his *ss. Do you want to end up just like him? If not, you better get out of my sight right now."

A wave of anger rose from within Darryl.

Darryl's eyes turned bloodshot, but said with a smile, "I'll tell you what, I'm not leaving today and I'll also screw you over tonight." The last sentence had come out from his gritted teeth.

Lily stumped on her feet. "Darryl, what're you saying! Don't fool around. You only went into

prison for stealing two phones and you think you're a gangster now?"

What was Darryl thinking? Why was he still pretending to be cool at times like this?

Lily knew she had been drugged and the best way to get out now was to beg Donoghue to let her go. Although she also knew there was no way Donoghue would release her, it was still better than challenging him. Dax was so powerful yet he had been beaten so badly by them last night. There was no way Darryl could fight them off.

"Kid, did you just say you want to screw me over?" Donoghue questioned him as if he just heard a joke. He laughed and clapped his hands.

Suddenly, around ten burly men rushed into the room with knives in their hands and surrounded Darryl with violent looks.

"Ah! Please don't hit this kid, yet. Don't hurt my pretty girl." Galvin interrupted with a smile and pulled Lily on her wrist. "Don't be scared, my pretty girl. Look at you. You can't even stand up properly. Come, let me hug you." Galvin was about to pull Lily into his arms after saying that.

"Get away from me!" Lily scowled and tried to struggle but had no energy.

Damn it!

At this instant, Darryl threw Galvin a punch out of the blue.

Bam!

The punch landed on Galvin's face before he could react and he was tossed into the air before violently smacked against the wall.

"How dare you to hit me!" Galvin staggered up with half his face swollen as he breathlessly groaned.

Darryl did not speak and protectively pushed Lily behind him.

Suddenly, a glaring red light that illuminated the entire bar accompanied the Blood Drinking Sword that appeared in Darryl's hand out of thin air.

"I'm not only going to screw you over today. I want everyone in this room to lay on the floor tonight." Darryl demanded with a cold tone as his sword pointed directly at Donoghue.

"This kid is weird, kill him!" Donoghue called out to his men.

The ten or so muscular men rushed toward Darryl upon his order.

At this instant, the bar's entrance was kicked open with over 200 muscular men armed with knives marched into the bar with Caelan leading them.

“Hall Master!”

“Any man who dared to touch my Hall Master shall be killed!”

Around 200 men rushed in like madmen.

“Leave no man alive, kill them all!” Darryl ordered coldly.

Smack!

With that said, Caelan threw his knife and killed two people at once.

Within five minutes, all of Donoghue’s men were laying on the floor. Galvin was also laying on the floor with his livelihood unclear.

Donoghue was curled up on the sofa by now with his white suit tainted in red from blood and his face filled with horror.

“Bro, this is a misunderstanding. This must’ve been a misunderstanding. I’ve nothing to do with this. I’m just Lily’s fan.” Donoghue staggeringly explained with his forehead full of sweat.

Misunderstanding?

Haha...

An eerie look appeared on Darryl’s face as he walked closer to him with the Blood Drinking Sword in his

hand. “You’re telling me now it’s all a misunderstanding? My brother is still lying in the hospital and you are f*cking telling me it’s all but a misunderstanding?”

His Blood Drinking Sword stabbed through Donoghue’s shoulder after he said that.

“Ah!”

The sword went through Donoghue’s shoulder along with a loud moan sounding like pigs in a slaughterhouse.

“The number of stabs which you gave my brother, I’ll return them tenfold!” Darryl warned coldly as he stabbed him again.

Chapter 246

Stab! Stab! Stab!

The sword went through him again and again as fresh blood flooded the floor. Donoghue had fainted, but this did not stop Darryl. All the disciples of Eternal Life Palace Sect looked at Darryl with fear as their bodies shivered at his actions.

...

Darryl emotionlessly walked out of the bar half an hour later.

“Darryl, wait for me...” Lily swiftly followed behind him with her delicate face filled with panic. The drug in her body had ceased its effects by then and she was finally able to walk on her own.

Darryl did not stop moving as if he did not hear her and continued toward his car.

Lily panicked and hastily rushed up. She stopped Darryl by grabbing his arm. “Darryl, I’m sorry. Please, don’t leave...”

Haha...

Darryl swung her hand away and said coldly, “Now you’re sorry? What were you doing when Dax tried

to help you yesterday? He even told you Donoghue isn't a good person. What were you thinking?"

Lily bit her lips. She was very guilty but still refuted, "Darryl, I already said I'm sorry! Can't you be more reasonable? It's not like I can read minds. How am I supposed to know Donoghue isn't a good person? Besides, he paid me so much money. How can I reject meeting him up?"

Darryl's face darkened and he remained silent.

Lily panted breathlessly with reddened eyes. "I've also been kicked out of my family. I really have no choice but to become an anchor. Where were you when I needed you the most? Did you even help me? Now you reappear out of nowhere and tell me off..." Her breathing became heavier as she said this while staring at Darryl.

Darryl clenched his fists. "I've always been here! In the past three years of our marriage, I've never left! How much did he pay you? What he paid isn't even one-tenth of what I paid for you!"

A shiver went past Lily's body as she stared blankly at Darryl.

The person who paid her the most was 'Hill'. Hill... Hill... Darryl... Rryl... Hill! Darryl's name rhymed with Hill!

Darryl! 'Hill' was Darryl's online nickname!

Lily was terribly trembling and unable to utter a word by then.

“Darryl, I’m wrong. I’m very sorry... Please, can you forgive me? I’m sorry...” Ten seconds later, Lily pleaded as she held on to his wrist tightly and begged.

It turned out he had been by her side since day one and had done so much for her.

“Dax will have to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair because of you, do you know that? Do you? He’s disabled. He’s disabled because of you!” Darryl yelled at her as he swung her hand and drove away without hesitation.

“Darryl...”

Lily stood there transfixed as she watched Darryl’s car drive away as tears uncontrollably rolled down her cheeks.

Lily did not know how she got home as she was overwhelmed with guilt and remorse.

...

On the next day, Lily still locked herself in her bedroom as she had not slept for the entire night while she recalled what happened in the past two days.

Why did she not listen to Dax when he asked her to leave? Dax was Darryl's good friend and they were like brothers. Of course, he would not ask her to leave for no reason!

She was so foolish, so foolish! She could not forgive herself especially when she saw Dax laid on the floor deeply wounded but did not even try to help him!

She was so guilty for what she did or did not do. She was overwhelmed with so much guilt and remorse...

However...

Was Darryl not placed into prison for stealing? Why was he released so quickly?

Also... Who were those people following him around? Who were those men?

...

For the next few days, Donghai City was extraordinarily lively. Everyone was discussing two breaking news that happened in the city. The first news was Master Dixon, Donoghue had been stabbed in his own Dynasty Bar. Nobody knew who did it. Everyone only knew he had 360 stabs on him with every stab intentionally avoided giving him a fatal blow. It was obvious the person did not want to kill him and was just taking vengeance on him.

According to the news, Donoghue was immediately sent to the ICU and had stayed there for two nights till now.

Chapter 247

Who had such courage to hurt Donoghue? The Dixon family was a powerful family in Yunzhou City which was the capital city!

Another breaking news was the formation of Hexad School in Donghai City.

The Hexad School was formed by the Six Orthodox Sect. The principal of the school was Graham Potter—deputy head of Wudang Sect and a highly respectable individual with a good personal reputation—who was greatly admired by the other sects. The appointment of the six sects elders as school teachers only showed how important this school was to the six sects.

The Hexad School had a similar system as any other ordinary high school which only accepted full-time students. The rules and regulations were also as strict as any high school or college. Any unnotified absence would result in being expelled. The school offered a three-year course and after three years, the school would select the best performing graduate to become an Elder of the Six Sect.

An Elder of the Six Sect, who would let this opportunity slip away?

As an Elder of the Six Sect, one would be able to learn the secrets of every sect and at the end of every year, each sect would give out spiritual elixirs and pills to their Elders.

The entire Donghai City went into an uproar when the Hexad School was formed! Lots of people signed up which included high school graduates, college graduates, and heirs of wealthy families. Any wealthy family would know the importance of becoming a cultivator well enough. It would bring glory and pride to their family if one of their members could become an Elder of the Six Sect.

Within a day, more than ten thousand people from Donghai City signed up for the school which included pupils from nearby cities. Within a day's time, the Hexad School had become the largest school in Donghai City.

...

Donghai City First Hospital.

It was almost autumn and the weather was getting colder.

Nancy was accompanying Dax by his bedside in the VIP ward. It had been two days and Dax was still laying on the bed while being bandaged like a mummy. Although his wounds had stopped

hurting, it was announced his legs were completely damaged and he would have to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair. Nancy was depressed but did not show it as she stayed by his side still hoping for miracles to happen one day.

“Dax, don’t worry. Grandpa is thinking of ways to help you take revenge.” Nancy reassured him despite not being confident about it either.

Dax nodded. He did not regret what he had done. If he was given a chance to turn back time, he would still do what he had done over again. This was the whole purpose of being in a sincere brotherhood. He could not watch his brother’s wife being assaulted by others.

Ding...

Meanwhile, Nancy’s phone lit up as her face lit up with a smile after reading the message.

“Wonderful news!”

“What’s up?” Dax asked curiously.

Nancy walked toward him with excitement in her eyes. “Donoghue was stabbed three hundred times by someone! They are still trying to save his life in the hospital.” Nancy trembled with excitement. “Karma, this is karma!”

Huh?

Donoghue was stabbed?

Dax was stunned as his heart was filled with immense joy despite being quite shocked. “Who did it?”

Nancy shook her head. “The news is passed on by your men. They don’t know who did it either. This news has also been spreading around the city. Who cares? The person who did this must’ve been someone with a big background! I’m sure Donoghue had offended many people.” Nancy smiled.

Dax nodded in agreement.

Chapter 248

The door was opened as they spoke and Darryl hastily rushed in toward his bed with a black pill in his hand. “Dax, hurry up. Eat this!”

Darryl seemed anxious.

Dax opened his mouth and swallowed the pill without hesitation.

As he swallowed, he frowned and said with a bitter face, “Damn it! Darryl, what did you put into my mouth? It tastes so weird and smelly!”

It tasted horrible, just like sh*t.

“Hehe, this pill is indeed very smelly. Though it has a very elegant name—the Five Beasts Reincarnation Pill,” replied Darryl with a mysterious smirk.

Huh?

Five Beasts Reincarnation Pill?

Dax stared at him dubiously with his eyes wide open.

Darryl wiped his hand with a wet tissue and explained with a smile, “Have you watched Journey to the West? In one of the scenes, the four of them went into the toilet in rotation and that toilet was

called the 'Place of Reincarnation'. This pill was made using five types of animal dung which included horse dung, sheep dung, cow dung, and..."

The other night when Darryl read through the Infinite Elixir Manual, he accidentally came across a spiritual elixir known as the Five Beasts Reincarnation Pill. The manual recorded that this pill could rebuild broken bones and was effective at curing wounds. It was exactly what Dax needed.

Surprisingly, Darryl happened to have all the required spiritual herbs to refine this pill as he had collected quite a few of them from the island. Of course, other than those required rare herbs, the main ingredients were five types of dung. In order to get hold of these five dungs, Darryl had traveled across the city as these materials were usually found in rural areas instead of big cities like Donghai City.

Once he finished refining the pill, Darryl immediately rushed to the hospital and got Dax to swallow it.

After listening to Darryl, Dax's face turned green, and tried to spit out the pill. "What!? Horse dung, sheep dung... Darryl! Why did you make me eat sh*t!? Damn you! Are you trying to kill me when I'm already ill?"

Damn it! It was five kinds of dungs combined

together...

Dax suddenly felt so unwell and only wanted to get the pill out from his throat now. It was so disgusting!

Nancy glared at Darryl as she rushed forward and gently patted on Dax's back. "Darryl, you are... Darling, are you alright? I'll pour you a glass of water..."

What was Darryl thinking? How could he let Dax ingest such a disgusting thing?

Darryl did not explain further and just stood there smiling.

A few seconds later.

"Dear, stop patting me."

Suddenly, Dax started to feel his hands and legs! A few seconds ago, he was still trying to spit out the pill, but was now just like a hyperactive child! He did a backflip before jumping out of bed such that even his legs were moving!?

Huh?

Dax could not even do a backflip before he was wounded!

Nancy was astonished. "Dax, you..."

Doctor Shelly clearly stated that Dax was severely

injured with his hamstrings broken. It was lucky for him to be alive, but he would have to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair.

What happened?! Dax not only stood up just fine but even did a backflip?

This was unbelievable! Nancy would not have believed had she did not see it with her own eyes. She was shaking with excitement by now, but it did not end there.

Dax took a step or two before starting to run around the ward like a monkey, jumping and hopping around. He did not seem to be injured at all!

“I can move! My legs have recovered! Fully recovered! Haha!” Dax hugged Darryl tightly while laughing with joy. “Wow, Darryl! You’re good at this! This pill works like magic! I didn’t eat sh*t for nothing!”

Darryl was overwhelmed with joy too but pushed Dax away with a look of disgust the moment Dax hugged him. “Damn it, your breath stinks like sh*t. Stay away from me...”

Chapter 249

Darryl knew the pill was effective but thought Dax needed some time to recover after taking the pill. Surprisingly, he instantly recovered. Dax was severely wounded, but those wounds were mostly physical cuts. He would not have recovered even with this pill if he was unlucky beaten by masters.

Meanwhile, Nancy with her lips trembling in disbelief stood by the side transfixed. She knew and heard with her own ears that even the most advanced treatments were of no help and Dax was to spend the rest of his life in a wheelchair. However, a small pill actually cured him. What a miracle!

Dax was jumping around like an overly excited kid and grabbed Darryl's shoulder. "Let's go and hit the bar!"

Nancy stumped on her feet and scolded, "That's insane! You just recovered. Can't you be more considerate to those people who care about you? Grandpa is still home worrying about you."

Dax ruffled his hair. "You're right. I'll go home and drink then. That will give Grandpa a surprise!"

"You..." Nancy shook her head, stumped her feet,

and asked him to brush his teeth. Dax had completely missed her point as she did not want Dax to have any alcohol since he just recovered.

...

The Sanders Mansion, 7pm.

Dax's mansion had a special name dedicated to it which was also known as Sanders Mansion. A few days ago, he even thought of purchasing a tall golden stick to place in the living room.

The family was having a heart-warming dinner inside the first-floor dining room.

Six people gathered around the dining table—Darryl, Dax, Nancy, Darryl's grandfather, and two others who seemed to be Dax's cousins.

His elder cousin was called Daisy Palmer while the younger cousin was Daphne Palmer. Both of them were not from Donghai City but had a good relationship with Dax.

Daisy and Daphne were the centers of attraction everywhere they went with Daisy having a mature sense of beauty and an alluring body, while Daphne had a youthful kind of beauty with a charming face. Once they heard that Dax had recovered, they came all the way to pay him a visit.

They were very excited until they saw Darryl

tagging along. He was dressed in cheap clothes which made him seem poor. Today was a special family occasion and they did not understand why Dax had to have him around. They even heard that Dax was injured because of him, therefore they did not like Darryl at the first glance. They also could not understand the reason Dax would be friends with someone poor like Darryl.

The more they thought along this line, the more they looked down on Darryl and gave him the cold shoulders. Were it not for their grandfather, they would have immediately left the dining table. Dining with someone from a lower-class like Darryl could make them look bad after all.

Darryl did not mind the cold shoulders given to him by Daisy and Daphne. He happily continued laughing and chatting with Dax. Of course, he did not forget to include Dax's grandfather in their conversation as he had always been respectful to his seniors.

After a while, Dax's grandfather smilingly looked at Dax. "My grandson, I'm pleased to see you've recovered. Have you heard that The Hexad School was established in Donghai City in the past two days?"

"Yeah, I've heard of it." Dax nodded.

Dax's grandfather continued, "I signed the three of

you up yesterday to go and study there. You, Daisy, and Daphne.”

Daisy and Daphne happily nodded as they knew their grandfather always made good decisions.

Grandpa looked at Dax with a hopeful look. He knew Dax would most likely stand out from the rest with his talents and abilities. It was even possible for him to become an Elder of the Six Sect. He would bring glory to the Sanders family if this came true.

Though Dax did not seem too excited, he sounded concerned. “Grandpa, if I joined the Hexad School, who would look after our family business?” He was concerned as his grandfather had retired a few years ago.

Grandpa smiled. “Don’t worry about this. After you enter the school, you still have Nancy to help look after the business. I’ll also help her when she needs it.”

Nancy nodded in agreement.

Dax also nodded with a smile. He then turned to look at Darryl, “Bro, what do you think? Wanna come along?”

Chapter 250

He would of course not leave Darryl behind. It would be fun for both of them to go back to school together!

“Haha! If you’re going, I’m coming of course!”

Darryl answered without hesitation. He then sent Pearl a message to help him sign up for that school.

Dax raised his wine glass in joy. “That’s great news! This is exactly what I want to hear!”

Nancy could not help adding in. “Aww look at the two of you. You’re like twins!”

Honestly, she was not too sure about her husband going back to school. She had heard all the big families both from within as well as those outside the city had signed up to that Donghai City’s school. This meant the Dixon family would also be sending their men over. It might not be too ideal for Dax to attend it with the Dixons now holding a grudge against their Sanders family. Although his cousins were going to be there, at the end of the day they were just women. Nancy was therefore more reassured when she heard Darryl would be going with him as well.

Meanwhile, Daisy made a snarky comment. “Oh

Darryl, I don't mean to let you down but this school isn't for anyone. I'm curious, do you even cultivate?"

Daphne nodded in agreement and coldly added. "Same here. I'm afraid they might turn you down from looking at you and your cheap clothes."

Darryl smiled and did not answer them. He was used to being spoken to with such nasty remarks for the past three years. In addition, they were Dax's cousins, hence he could not be bothered being dragged down to their level. He waved and laughed it off while trying to change the subject by taking out a Godly Pill and giving it to Dax. "Brother Dax, this pill is for you. You'll be amazed by its effects."

Dax was still a Level Five Master. If he remembered correctly, Dax wanted to buy a Godly Pill during their time at the auction, but Darryl stopped him from bidding.

This...

Dax received the pill with a confused expression. His first instinct was to assume Darryl had handed him some pill made of animal dung again.

Before Dax spoke, his cousins laughed. "Dax, don't just eat anything you see."

"Yeah, this pill looks dirty. Toss it away," said

Daphne as she frowned at Darryl. A poor guy like him feeding their cousin a dirty looking pill? Who was he kidding?

Suddenly, their grandfather stood up and spoke with an excited trembling voice, "Grandson, let me have a look at the pill!"

Dax handed him the pill.

Szz...

Their grandfather took in a cold breath the moment he received the pill while his old and wrinkly hand was shaking uncontrollably.

"This... This is the Godly Pill, isn't it? Is this the Godly Pill?" He had been cultivating for over ten years now and had been stuck at Level Five Master General for over a year now from not being able to make a breakthrough.

He heard there was a pill known as the Godly Pill which could help cultivators to make a breakthrough and had been looking for it all these years with no luck. Today, he saw this right in front of his eyes and almost broke into tears of excitement.

Huh?

The Godly Pill?

The dining hall was filled with pin-drop silence.

This pill was actually a Godly Pill? The one displayed at the auction?

At this instant, both Dax and Nancy were shocked speechless. They saw the pill was being sold at the auction for 50 billion bucks. The pill was very rare and expensively priced. They would never have thought Darryl had one with him!

The sisters by the side also frowned at the thought of it. Why would a cheap-looking man like Darryl possess a Godly Pill?

Daisy broke out a laugh. “This pill is so rare. Where did you steal it from?”

Chapter 251

‘What’s wrong with these women? Just because I have a Godly pill, it means I must’ve stolen it?’

Darryl thought while he remained silent.

Saul took a deep breath. “Dax, I can see that your friend treats you very well, giving you such a rare pill, haha! Hurry up and eat it.”

His eyes were glowing with sincerity even though he really wanted to have the pill for himself. If Saul took the Godly pill as a Level Five Master General, he would become a Martial Marquis! It was the highest rank one could achieve.

However, Dax was the patriarch of the Sanders family, and the family’s future depended on him. It made more sense for Dax to take the pill.

“Grandpa, you’ve been stuck as a Fifth Level Master General for a few years already. Please, take this. I’m about to enter The Hexad School soon; I’ll have lots of chances to eat it in the future,” Dax laughed.

“No way. You take it. I’m getting old, and it doesn’t mean much to me if I breakthrough or not. You still have a long time ahead of you, and you’ll face more dangers than me. This pill will be good for you.

Listen to me and just eat it,” Saul refused.

He was determined for Dax to have it. No matter how much he wanted to have it, he knew he had to be rational and do what was best for the family.

“No. Please, Grandpa, you have it.”

“What now? You’ve grown up and decided to disobey your Grandpa?”

By then, both of them were almost fighting for the good of the other.

“Stop fighting, I’ve another one here,” Darryl interrupted them with a smile as he took out another Godly pill from his pocket.

‘Huh? Another one?’ the crowd thought.

Suddenly, the dining hall turned silent again. Even Daisy and Daphne had to take another look at Darryl with disbelief.

A Godly pill was the most precious pill in the world of cultivation.

Darryl smiled at the eyes glued on him and handed the pill to Dax. “Alright, now that each of you has one, hurry up and take them.”

“Darryl, you...” Dax was left speechless with excitement. Without hesitation, he swallowed the pill.

His Grandpa swallowed the pill too. Both of them could not contain their excitement any longer.

Suddenly, Daisy recovered from the shock and asked Darryl with a sincere look, “Darryl, do you still have any more?”

Daisy and Daphne had been stuck at Level Five Master for a very long time and could not breakthrough no matter how hard they tried. After seeing Darryl take two Godly pills out of his pocket, they could not help but look at Darryl differently.

“If you do, please give us one, too,” Daphne added.

However, their tone was still rude and arrogant.

“I’m afraid I only brought two with me. That’s all I have,” Darryl said coldly without even looking at them.

‘They mocked me moments ago, and now they’re asking for Godly pills? Do they think I’m a kid?’

Darryl thought.

However, it was true that he only had two pills with him today as he did not have enough time to refine more these days.

After hearing that, Daisy and Daphne did not seem pleased but did not say anything further since Saul was there.

Meanwhile, Saul excused himself to go back to his room as he had alcohol, and the pill was starting to get to him.

Once he left, Daisy continued mocking Darryl, “So you only have two pills?”

“Yeah, I’m sure that you stole it from somewhere else. You’re so brave to steal the Godly pill. If someone caught you, they’d chop your legs and kill your family. Is that worth it for stealing two pills?” Daphne added sarcastically.

Darryl laughed. These women changed so quickly after learning that they could not get a pill from him.

“You two think so highly of me. Who wouldn’t keep their Godly pill in a safe place? I can’t possibly steal it from someone. If you think it’s easy, why don’t you two go and steal some?” Darryl said.

“You...” Daphne could not think of any snarky comeback, so she stood up. “Dax, we have things to attend to. We’ll be leaving now.”

Both of them stomped out of the dining hall in their heels. As they left, they did not even glance at Darryl. They thought they could get the Godly pill from him, but he only had two, and they did not want to waste their time talking to someone like

him.

Chapter 252

Dax and Darryl drank through the night, speaking freely, and having a great time. They had no idea how much they had drunk nor how they fell asleep.

The next morning, Nancy woke them up. She was dressed in a black fringed dress and heels, looking charming as always.

“Dax, Darryl, wake up! It’s time to register at The Hexad School. Did you two forget?” Nancy said.

Dax jumped up. “Ah! I totally forgot about that. Darryl, hurry up! Wash your face!”

...

Today, Donghai City was extraordinarily lively.

It was the opening of The Hexad School, and everyone would want to check it out.

Private cars filled the school’s entrance, and more than twenty thousand students gathered by the square, waiting.

In situations like this, one thing all men were concerned about was to look out for pretty women. To be honest, there were lots of good looking female students in this school.

“Look here, look here! The chick in a dress looks good.”

“That woman in a short skirt is sexy!”

The men exchanged their findings with one another.

Among the crowd, some familiar faces were seen: Lily, Elsa, William, Yvonne, and Justin. They had all signed up for the program.

Meanwhile, a loud roar of an engine filled the air.

Everyone turned to see a Rolls Royce driving over.

“Damn, it’s a Rolls Royce!”

“Isn’t that a few million bucks? I heard even an umbrella inside the car costs ten thousand bucks!”

The Rolls-Royce pulled over, and a young man walked out of the car slowly. It was Kent Hough. He was dressed in branded clothes with his hair dyed bright yellow. It was not the most attractive look, but he would still be considered handsome since he walked out of a Roll-Royce. Lots of female students looked at him with desire in their eyes.

Meanwhile, Megan Castello walked by his side. Her looks stood out from the rest of the girls. Kent thought he looked good and flipped his hair. He enjoyed being the center of attention.

However, this only lasted three hours. The other

side of the square was now in an uproar. Everyone turned over to see a Lamborghini pulling over.

“Damn! Sports car! It’s a sports car!”

“It’s my first time seeing this car! It’s so gorgeous! This is at least ten million!”

The car fans gathered around the car in excitement, while the female students rushed over to check out who was driving it.

The Lamborghini pulled over, and the door opened as a young, handsome man walked out.

“It’s Mr. Claydon. Gordon Claydon!”

The Claydon family was in the clothing industry. It was a big and wealthy family with businesses all over the country, and Gordon Claydon was their heir. Gordon looked handsome, and with his Lamborghini, he drove a lot of the female students crazy. It was no surprise when a few women kept on screaming when they saw him.

“Look over here, someone else is coming!” someone shouted in the crowd, and everyone looked over.

Suddenly, the uproar turned into pin-drop silence.

An extended Lincoln drove by slowly. The car was surrounded by hundreds of men in black marching

along, making the scene majestically stunning.

Who could it be? Even the heirs of the wealthy were stunned as they stared at Lincoln.

This extended Lincoln was a customized edition, and probably less than five existed in the world.

Chapter 253

The car itself was crazy enough, but on top of that, there were hundreds of men guarding it. The scene was truly amazing. The person inside the car must be someone important and could not be compared to a small family.

‘Who could it be? A student at the school?’ everyone wondered.

All eyes were glued to the vehicle as it slowly came to a halt. The hundreds of men stood in two lines, and the lead guard opened the door.

A sexy and attractive lady came out of the Lincoln.

Everyone held their breath.

‘Gorgeous! She was so gorgeous!’ everyone thought.

She was dressed in a long, black dress and exuded an air of style and elegance. Her body was so captivating. Not only the ordinary men stared at her, but even the wealthy kids stared at her without blinking!

“God! She came to the school, too?” someone screamed with excitement, and the area was in an uproar again.

The Newman family from Kyoto was a big family with a long history, and they had properties and businesses all over the place. Not only that, a few of the family members were the Elders of Tianshan School. Nobody would have thought that the heiress of the Newman family would be here.

“Circe Newman is so beautiful! I’d be happy to die just to spend a night with her!” someone exclaimed

“In your dreams! She’s way out of our league,” someone replied.

As everyone was talking among themselves, a staff member put up a name list on the board.

“The class arrangement list is out!” someone screamed.

The list clearly stated who was going to which class. In an instant, everyone gathered around the board.

Meanwhile, a private car pulled over, and Darryl and Dax got out.

‘Damn it. There are so many people?’ Darryl thought.

Darryl was shocked by the number of people at the square. The traffic was horrible on their way here, and he thought it would be less crowded at school, but he was wrong. After all, this was a school built

by the Six Sect. Even the gate was majestic and was as wide as forty meters long. On the left side of the gate, 'Six Sect' was carved while 'The Hexad School' was inscribed on the right side.

“Damn it, Darryl. The list is out already! Let’s go and have a look!” Dax said.

There were too many people, and it took them quite a while before finding out which class they were in.

“Hahaha, Darryl! Both of us are in the same class. My two cousins too! The four of us are going to be in the same class, ” Dax laughed.

Darryl looked again and saw that the four of them were in Year One Class Sixteen.

“Darryl!” a familiar voice called.

A familiar figure walked toward Darryl; it was Lily.

When she appeared, everyone stared at her as all the men wondered who would be lucky enough to be in the same class as her.

Stopping in front of Darryl, she pulled on Darryl’s hand. “Darryl, are you still mad at me? I’m so very sorry.”

Her voice was small, and only Darryl could have heard it, but he did not answer her. Nor did he want to speak to her.

“Lily, you’re here, too? Haha,” Dax greeted as he walked over.

Although he was severely wounded because of her, she was still Darryl’s wife, so he forgave her.

Chapter 254

“Dax Sanders?” Lily was shocked to see Dax walking like normal.

‘Wasn’t he stabbed and cut with thirty or so knives? Why does he seem just fine?’ Lily thought as she bit her lips

“Dax, I’m so sorry for the other night-” she muttered.

Before letting her finish, Dax laughed and waved it off. “That was nothing. Darryl’s like my brother, so of course, I’d jump in right away when I see you in danger. Haha!”

Dax’s laugh instantly made the whole scene seem less awkward.

Lily smiled and glanced at Darryl. She saw that Darryl did not respond to her and started panicking.

“Darryl, please, please don’t stay mad at me. I’m really sorry, I really am,” Lily pleaded as she bit her lips.

Darryl took in a long breath, his face was still emotionless. No, he was not pretending to be mad at her; he was actually still mad. All his life, he had

always wanted a trustworthy best-friend. He used to have many friends when he was still in the Darby family, but all these 'friends' ran and hid from him when he was kicked out.

Since then, he had no faith in friendships until he met Dax, who was the best brother he could ever ask for. Yet, Dax was stabbed and wounded severely because of Lily, and he almost lost his life! How could he forgive Lily?

Meanwhile, a snarky voice came from behind.

“Oh look, isn't this the live-in son-in-law? Why aren't you cleaning at home, and why are you signing up to the school?”

Darryl frowned and looked back. It was Kent with Megan behind him. Megan was dressed in a long, tight dress and heels, showing off her sexy body.

Darryl smiled at Kent, “What now? Who says a live-in son-in-law can't sign up?”

By then, the rich kids gathered behind Ken.

“Nobody said so, but the fact that you came will bring down the reputation of the school. C'mon up, everyone, this dude is a live-in son-in-law, hahaha! I'm sure you all have heard about him!” Kent said, becoming louder.

Darryl and Lily's wedding three years ago was the

biggest joke in the entire Donghai City.

Megan could not take it anymore; she pulled on Kent. “Can you please behave?”

Megan did not come here to study. As the leader of the Criminal Investigation team, she had no time to study. She only came today to send Kent off.

“But I’m just telling the truth! Who doesn’t know he’s a live-in son-in-law here?” Kent refuted.

Darryl scoffed but did not reply. Though Dax, who was by his side, could not take it any longer.

“F*ck off Kent! What’s wrong with you?” he yelled.

‘Damn it; he’s asking to be punched!’ Dax thought as he tried to refrain from beating Kent up.

Darryl was able to hold back his anger, but not Dax. He pointed his finger at Kent. “Shut your mouth! Your voice is annoying!”

Kent was shocked at Dax siding with Darryl. He was embarrassed for being told off in public.

“Dax, bro. I’m just mocking Darryl. I don’t think that’s any of your business,” Kent replied.

Honestly speaking, the Sanders were one of the most powerful families in Donghai City, and Kent did not want to offend him.

“F*ck off!” Dax was agitated further by Kent’s

backtalk.

Without warning, he punched Kent right in the face.

“Ah!” Kent screamed as his left eye became swollen instantly.

Without having any time to react, Dax kicked Kent on his shin, and he fell, kneeling on the floor.

Everyone was shocked. Nobody dared to step up and stop Dax from beating up Kent. Anyone in Donghai City knew Dax had a hot temper, and getting punched by him was considered lucky compared to being stabbed by him.

Darryl felt so good watching this, though he still went up to pull Dax away. “Dax, Dax, it’s fine. Don’t waste your time with this clown.”

Although Darryl said the words himself, he still kicked Kent real hard when he pulled Dax away. The kick landed right on Kent’s head, knocking his head to the floor like a dog eating mud.

“Ah, I’m so sorry,” Darryl said, pretending it was all an accident as he secretly smiled.

“F*ck you, Darryl!” Kent yelled.

He was so triggered and embarrassed, yet he could not come up with anything else to say.

“Darryl, Dax, that’s enough!” Megan stomped in

between them in her heels. “We’re at the entrance of the school. Why are you all fighting!?”

Chapter 255

Megan helped Kent up. He was her fiancé, so how could she feel good watching him get beaten?

Megan and Dax 'worked' closely together. While Dax was well-known for his bad reputation in the city, Megan was well-known for being the most attractive policewoman. They had to cross one another's path every so often. Dax was equivalent to a 'street' king in Donghai City, but Megan could not go after him unless he was doing something very illegal.

Dax spat on the floor as he walked to the side. "Damn it, he asked for it!"

Kent cried out dry tears. The punch was so painful that his head was still buzzing. No matter how pissed off he was, he did not dare speak up.

Megan let out a sigh when she saw Dax walking away. She grabbed Darryl's hand and pulled him to the side.

"Hey, why are you pulling me?" Darryl questioned.

By then, both of them were far away from the crowd. Megan stopped.

"My Good big brother, I have a favor to ask you,"

Megan said softly, biting her lips. ①

“What?”

Whenever Megan needed a favor from him, she called him ‘Good big brother,’ and when there was no favor, she called him ‘Good little brother.’

“Do you have any Godly pills on you? Could you give one to me?” Megan asked softly.

‘Huh? Godly pill again?’ Darryl thought.

He was still pissed that he had to give one to Kent the other day.

He smiled, “I don’t have one with me now, but I’ll let you know.”

He really did not have one with him. He gave the last two pills to Dax and his Grandpa.

Megan bit her lips and pleaded, “My Good big brother, please. You have to help me!”

In a week, the Emei sect was going to host a conference in Donghai City. Megan’s close friend, Miranda Fox, was an Elder of the Emei sect.

Miranda was in her thirties and was very gifted as she was the youngest Elder in the sect. Not only that, but she was also the prettiest Elder. She had been stuck as a Level Five General Master for a very long time, and Megan knew Miranda would be

pleased if she could give her a Godly pill during the conference.

Meanwhile, a guard walked out of the entrance and spoke into the megaphone.

“Attention everyone. Attention. Classes have been allocated. Please, may all students make your way into the school and go into your allocated classrooms.”

With that said, thousands of people rushed to the entrance all at once; it was as scary as a tsunami but seemed majestic from afar.

Everyone was filled with excitement as they all knew that studying here would entail a bright future.

‘Damn it! They’re all going in!’ Darryl thought.

Darryl rushed back in. “Alright, alright, let’s talk about this tomorrow. I’ve got to go!”

“My Good big brother, please don’t forget! I’ll call you tomorrow,” Megan called out as he left.

...

There were at least ten thousand students this year being allocated into different classrooms. Darryl was allocated to classroom sixteen, located on the third floor. When he arrived at his classroom, all

the seats were almost taken. Every student was buzzing with excitement, and the classroom was as noisy as an outdoor market. Though it was no surprise as studying at The Hexad School was something to be excited about.

“Darryl, come over here!” Darryl heard as he entered the classroom.

Dax was waving at him with a grin. He was seated in the middle row.

Darryl smiled as he made his way there. Suddenly, a cold and elegant figure caught his gaze. Sitting in front of Dax was an attractive woman, exuding an air of coldness like an iceberg. It was Circe Newman. Compared to the people around her, she was relatively quiet, and her charm would attract any man.

She was beautiful. Extremely beautiful.

She was a natural beauty with her delicate features and her skin as fair as jade.

‘Who would have thought there was such a beautiful lady in their class?’ Darryl thought.

Darryl could not help but take a few more glances at her. “Not too bad, Dax. This is a good spot, right behind this gorgeous lady! Hahaha!”

Dax answered with a proud grin, “Of course! Only

both of us get to sit in such a great spot!”

Meanwhile, a woman dressed in professional attire walked to the podium. She was in her thirties with her alluring curves hidden in her work attire.

However, she had a very stern look on her face.

“Keep the volume down.”

The classroom became pin-drop silent in an instant.

The woman glanced around the room and introduced herself, “I’m Katherine Keith, a Xiaoyao Sect Elder, and I’m the teacher of this class.

‘Wow!’ the class thought.

Chapter 256

The classroom was in an uproar after the teacher introduced herself. The male students were ecstatic. Not only were they lucky enough to be in the same class as Circe Newman, but they also had a gorgeous teacher.

“Miss Katherine, you’re so pretty. Do you have a boyfriend?” a voice asked from the back row.

Lots of male students added their remarks in their attempts to flirt with Katherine, especially the wealthy kids that were used to picking up girls wherever they went. The guy who spoke from the back row was Ryan Nicholas. His family opened a chain of supermarkets in Donghai City.

Katherine, who was at the podium, raised her hand and pointed at Ryan. “You stand up.”

Ryan stood up with a grin. He had no idea what was about to happen.

Katherine walked over to him with a stick in her hand. She stopped in front of him, and asked coldly, “Have you been to school before? Has anyone told you to respect your teachers?”

Looking at her glare, Ryan started to panic. “I...”

Smack!

Before he could finish his sentence, Katherine smacked him on the head.

A loud smack was heard, and everyone was shocked! It seemed to be a strong smack, and the classroom lights flickered a little due to the smack's vibration.

“Don't you dare pull that face ever again. Do you understand?” Katherin warned.

She spoke with the force exerted from her energy field, and a strong wave of vibration exploded after she spoke!

‘Huh? She was a Level One Master General?’ everyone thought.

Everyone felt her rank instantly, and the class became silent. Everyone held their breath out of fear. Especially Ryan. He stood there transfixed. He was one of the wealthy kids, and he was used to always getting the girl, but this was a first! This gorgeous woman was a Level One Master General. With her ability, she could easily kill Ryan with just one finger.

Meanwhile, Darryl secretly gulped in fear. He could tell that the principal of this school must be the strongest of the strongest.

‘Damn it, how was he supposed to steal the thing?’

He would be killed right away,' he thought.

With that in mind, Darryl seemed disheartened.

“You, get out and stand by the door!” Katherine ordered.

Ryan did not dare to make a sound as he touched his swollen head in pain and walked to stand by the door.

By then, everyone in the class looked intimidated. Who would dare to speak up to such a strict teacher?

She walked back up to the podium and glanced across the class. “There’s one more thing. The students who were fighting in the lobby earlier, stand up.”

The classroom went into a dead silence. Some even glanced at Dax secretly. Everyone saw what happened between Dax and Kent earlier.

However, Dax remained calm. Who would want to admit this after what just happened in class?

“So you’re not showing yourself, are you?”

Katherine pointed at Darryl and Dax. “The two of you. Do you think you can get away with it? Stand up.”

“Damn it,” Dax cursed under his breath, although his face seemed unperturbed as he stood up. Darryl

stood up beside him.

“You’re Dax Sanders, right? Your family has quite a reputation in Donghai City. Your grandfather is Saul Sanders. Years ago, he built his family from nothing with only his pair of hands and became successful. Today, the Sanders family can do as they please in Donghai City, and nobody dares to challenge you, am I right?” Katherine said.

‘How did she know so much?’ the class thought.

In that instant, everyone took a cold breath, their faces in shock. Even Dax looked at Katherine blankly out of surprise.

‘How does she know so much about me?’ Dax thought.

Katherine continued, “Let me tell you now, I’ve done my research on every one of you before the school started, and I know exactly who you all are. Every head of class has a clear report of every student’s background. I’m telling you now, no matter how big or powerful your families are, this is a school, and you all must behave!”

As Katherin spoke, her gaze stopped on Darryl. “You! Darryl Darby! The live-in son-in-law of the Lyndon family. You’ve been married into the Lyndon family for three years, but you have done nothing. Your parents are living in the rural area,

am I correct?”

Hahaha!

The class was suddenly filled with laughter.

Chapter 257

“What are you all laughing at? Shut up!” Katherine glared at the class. A strong vibration permeated from her energy field once again.

Suddenly, everyone in the class stopped laughing. Although they still glanced at Darryl with a mocking look.

Katherine glared at Darryl, “Look at you, why do you fight? You’re not Dax; you don’t have a powerful family. What makes you think you can fight?”

‘Damn it. What did I do? Stupid Kent insulted me, and I only kicked him in return.’ Darryl thought to himself but did not say it out loud.

Katherine continued, “I don’t care who you are. In this class, every one of you will cultivate and not cause any trouble. The two of you fought at the entrance on the first day of school. That’s disrespectful. Go down to the field and run a hundred laps.”

‘Huh? A hundred laps?’ Dax thought.

Dax’s face darkened. “A hundred laps? I won’t run a lap!”

With that said, Dax sat down with an angry look.

‘Damn it, is she insane? Nobody had ever asked me to run a hundred laps!’ Dax thought.

Out of the blue, Dax got slapped twice on the face before anyone realized.

Slap! Slap!

Katherine had walked towards Dax and slapped him. It was so loud and crisp that everyone in the class could hear how strong the slaps were.

In an instant, Dax’s face was swollen. Of course, with a bad temper like his, he stood up right away, and an ax appeared in his hand. He did not care who this Katherine woman was. No matter if it was a man or woman, Dax would not let anyone slap him like that.

However, before Dax could move his ax, Katherine slapped him again.

Slap! Slap!

The other side of Dax’s face was swollen like a pig too. He glared at Katherine with such anger that he looked like he would lash out at her at any time.

‘Damn!’ Darryl thought.

He saw it in Dax’s eyes, so he quickly held onto Dax

to stop him. “Alright, alright, don’t get mad. Let’s just admit-”

Before he could finish, Katherine raised her hand again and slapped Darryl on his cheeks.

Slap! Slap!

Instantly, Darryl could feel his cheeks burning!

‘Damn it, what was that for? Why did she hit me? Damn it! I’m an innocent man!’ Darryl thought, confused.

“Both of you deserve to be punished for your mistakes. This is a rule. In this school, you have to do anything I say. Either you get out of class and never come back, or go to the field and run,” Katherine warned.

Katherine stared at Dax and showed her three fingers, “You have three seconds.”

“Three...”

“Two...”

‘Damn it,’ Dax cursed in his mind.

Dax was triggered, and his eyes were blood red. No matter how much he wanted to lash out at her, he knew he could never fight Katherine.

Meanwhile, Darryl grabbed his arm. “Let it go, Dax.

Let's go run."

One had to admit that Katherine was a very strict teacher. It was their first day of school, and they were already being punished to run laps around the field.

Chapter 258

‘What an unlucky day,’ Dax thought.

Dax was panting breathlessly with his face looking stone cold as he did laps around the field with Darryl.

“F*ck her! I’ll remember this Katherine woman. I’ve never been more insulted in my entire life!” Dax ranted as he ran.

He had been slapped four times and punished to run a hundred laps.

It was insulting to Dax.

“Alright, with what we’ve got now, I doubt it’s the right time to take revenge. When you’re under someone, you really got to let go of your ego,” Darryl comforted Dax with a helpless look on his face.

In the classrooms above them, the class teacher let the students do some self-study after introducing themselves.

In Year One Class Seventeen, Kent Hough was sitting by the window. As he was bored, he looked out of the window and saw what was happening in

the field.

“Haha! Everyone look over there! Isn’t that the live-in son-in-law? He’s been punished to run laps around the field!” he yelled excitedly.

Everyone in his class gathered at the window and laughed at Darryl.

“It really is him!”

Not only them, but the students from the other classes looked at the field as well. Being punished to run laps on the first day of school was definitely something worth laughing at. Even Lily and Yvonne could not resist as they joined in and watched Darryl run.

Today was the opening of The Hexad School, as well as the first day of school. Yet, a few ‘famous’ ones already got their names to the top of the list.

At the top of the list was obviously Circe Newman. She was the heiress of the Newman family. With such a powerful background and her attractive looks, she gained popularity instantly. There were almost no men in school that did not fall for her.

The person who was second on the ‘famous’ list was Gordon Claydon. His family was in the fashion industry, so he had a great sense of style. Besides that, he was very attractive, so he gained the hearts

of the women easily.

Naturally, Circe and Gordon became the most popular lady and gentleman in the school.

The next person on the list was obviously Darryl. Darryl gained his fame not because of his hundred laps but because of his title of 'the live-in son-in-law.' Everyone heard how he lived with his wife for three years but never touched her. Who would have thought that Darryl had become the joke of the school before the day even ended?

Since today was the first day of school, there was no scheduled class, and the day ended in the afternoon. Within half an hour, most of the students had left the complex. However, it was not until 3 pm when Darryl and Dax finally finished their hundred laps.

"Damn it. I'm so tired!" Dax complained as they walked out of the school. Dax was covered in sweat; his clothes were thoroughly wet. He grabbed onto Darryl's shoulders. "Let's go shower somewhere. I'm covered in sweat!"

As they spoke, a gorgeous woman walked toward them; it was Lily.

Lily had two bottles of water in her hands. She walked up to them as soon as she saw them. She handed them water. "I got you guys drinks. Darryl, drink this."

“Haha! You’re so thoughtful!” Dax accepted the bottle right away and took a big mouthful of water, letting out a refreshing sigh when he finished.

Darryl did not accept the water and grabbed Dax’s shoulder. “Dax, let’s find somewhere to shower.”

Lily panicked as she bit her lips. “Darryl, please don’t stay mad at me. Will you please come home with me? I’m really sorry. I’m begging you...”

Chapter 259

In the past few days, Lily had been feeling incredibly guilty.

With no response from Darryl, she grew more anxious and held on to his wrist. “I’m really sorry, Darryl. Please, will you come home with me?”

Darryl acted as if he did not hear her. He continued talking to Dax, “Let’s go, hurry! Didn’t you say you want to find a place to shower? Let’s grab a drink after you shower.”

Dax shook his head. “I’m not drinking with you! I’m not going to shower either. Your wife asked you to go home.”

With that said, Dax turned and ran away.

“Darryl, I really am sorry. Please forgive me, and come home with me?” Lily begged with her eyes red as she hugged Darryl from behind.

She had reflected a lot on her past actions these few days and regretted everything she had ever said or done to Darryl.

“If you’re not coming home with me, I’ll follow you wherever you go,” Lily pleaded, biting on her

lips.

After hearing that, Darryl took a long deep breath. “Fine, fine, fine! I’ll come with you.”

If she was to follow him everywhere he went, it would not be convenient anyway. Going home with her was fine, but he would not forgive her so easily.

On their way home, Darryl kept a straight face and did not speak a word.

...

Half an hour later, they arrived at Windon Villas.

Lily thought the greatest decision she had ever made was buying this villa. Within a few days after her purchase, the prices had already gone up.

It was almost dusk, and the villas loomed in the shadow of the sunset. Surrounded by mountains and mists, the scene was picturesque, like a paradise on earth.

Darryl nodded with pleasure as he looked at the villas built by his company, Windon Real Estate. He was right about Jade. Under her leadership, the company thrived. Jade must have put in so much effort on this project as every single villa was well designed. He recalled Jade saying that the villas were selling well and that only one villa was left.

Lily held on to his arm tightly. “Let’s go. Ours is

Number Two.”

Darryl smiled, “You go in first. I’ll go buy some fruits.”

There was a supermarket in the Windon Villas, and Darryl wanted to get some fruits from there. After all, he had not been home for so many days. If he went back empty-handed, Samantha would not be pleased.

“That’s not needed. Let’s just go home,” Lily smiled. It did not matter at all, as long as he forgave her.

Darryl shook his head as he insisted, “I’ll go get some. It won’t take long. I’ll be back soon.”

He wanted to buy some fruits and visit his parents, too.

Since he insisted, Lily gave in and nodded. “Alright then, but promise me you’ll come back after you’re done?”

After getting the cold shoulder from him for the past few days, she was afraid. She was afraid of him leaving.

Darryl smiled and nodded. He then turned and walked toward the supermarket.

As he was almost there, a girl drove toward him in a

motorbike. She was dressed in a faint pink dress and looked youthful and beautiful.

Darryl could not help to take a second glance at her. She seemed familiar.

The girl got down from the motorbike when she passed him. “What a coincidence! Why are you here?”

Darryl suddenly recalled that she was Dora Simpson. They met downstairs of the Television Station when two scammers tried to trick her with an antique. Darryl saved her from being scammed.

“Oh yeah, what a coincidence!”

Chapter 260

“So, you came here to visit the area just like me?” Dora chirped enthusiastically.

‘Visit?’ Darryl thought. He was caught off guard for a little bit.

Dora was a university student majoring in architecture design. At the end of the semester, they had to submit some drafts. Dora heard that Windon Real Estate had built top-notch luxury villas, so she came here for inspiration.

She was surprised to see Darryl.

“I’m here to visit, aren’t you?” she let out an astonished sigh. “These villas are way too pretty!”

When Dora first met Darryl, he dressed like a security guard, and she assumed he worked security part-time. Today, Darryl was dressed casually, too, so she assumed he was a university student like herself who came here to visit.

Darryl smiled but did not speak.

“Oh yeah, which university are you from? Are you majoring in architecture design as well?” Dora chirped.

“I’m...” Darryl was about to say The Hexad School.

Dora continued talking before he could finish. “Ah! I haven’t thanked you for last time! Since you’re here, let’s visit the area together! Do you know which is the nicest spot here?”

Darryl shook his head. To be honest, although his company built this, it was actually his first time here.

“Follow me; I’ll show you!” Dora pulled on Darryl’s hand, and they arrived at Villa No.28.

“You’re lucky that you met me today! This is the most beautiful spot. If it weren’t for me, you wouldn’t find it!” Dora chirped happily.

Darryl looked around, and she was right. There was a man-made lake right in front of No.28. Beside the lake were trees, making the scene look picturesque, especially now that the sun was setting.

Dora took out her phone and captured a few photos. With a proud and fulfilled look, she turned to Darryl. “What do you think? Do you like the spot I found? This is the best spot to get some inspiration!”

Darryl nodded in agreement. To an architecture student, this scene must have been very inspiring.

“Oh wow, Dora Simpson? What a coincidence!” a

voice said from behind.

Turning around, a girl stood not too far from them. She was average-looking, almost five foot six, and dressed in streetwear with a pair of AJ on her feet. This girl was holding onto a fat guy's arm, and he had a beer belly under a gold chain. It was a real gold chain.

“Lisa Hill?” Dora called out her name with surprise.

Lisa Hill was her classmate. She did not come from a wealthy family, but with her looks, she had quite a lot of rich boyfriends throughout her three years at university.

Lisa scoffed and pointed at Darryl. “Is this your boyfriend? As they say, the same type of people get along. Dora, your family is poor, and you found a boyfriend as poor as you. People like you will never be able to afford houses like this! Do you even know how much per square foot these villas are? You and your boyfriend will never be able to afford something like this.”

Dora said softly with a blush, “I...We came here to visit.”

Lisa scoffed, “Tsk, tsk, tsk. So you came here to visit. The security guards here are not doing their job right by letting people like you, wearing cheap clothes, in.”

“You...” Dora was speechless.

In university, Lisa had always mocked her for being poor. She could not believe that she would bump into her today.

“Oh right, Dora, didn’t you come to visit? What’s the point of visiting the outside of the villas? You may come in and visit our villa later.” Lisa said before turning to look at the fat guy. “Jack is so nice to me; he’s about to buy me a villa here. Someone’s going to show us around later.”

Dora smiled politely and shook her head. “No, thanks.”

All she wanted to do was leave here as soon as possible.

Lisa had been bullying her for the past three years. She was used to it by now.

Sometimes, Lisa would shout out loud in class, “Dora’s shoes are ten bucks!” or whenever Dora wore something new, Lisa would yell, “Her clothes look so cheap!”

Darryl could not watch any longer. He let out a sigh and said, “I think most of the villas have already sold out. You’re too late to buy one now. Only No. 99 is left, and it’s very expensive. Every square foot is two hundred thousand bucks, and lots of people

are trying to get it.”

Lisa scoffed, “Oh, Dora, your boyfriend knows quite a few things! Let me tell you what the general manager of Windon Real Estate is my boyfriend’s cousin! She’s in charge, and she’ll only sell No.99 to us at 40 percent off! What about now? Jealous? No point in being jealous, though. People like you can never afford something like this.”

Chapter 261

'The fat guy was Jade's cousin? Jade was pretty, so why was her cousin so ugly and fat?' Darryl thought.

Darryl shook his head. "Lisa and Jack, right? Go home, they'll listen to me, and we won't sell you No. 99."

Lisa was caught off guard. She pointed at Darryl and scowled. "Listen to you? What did you say? That you won't sell the villa to us? Are you a staff member here? Tsk, tsk, tsk, I knew it. You're a security guard here, aren't you? Since when does the security guard have the right to refuse a buyer, eh?"

Her voice was loud and clear, and lots of passersby heard and gathered around them.

Dora's cheeks turned red, and she pulled on Darryl. "Let's just go."

"Don't go yet! Since your boyfriend is a security guard here, I'll phone my cousin now and fire him." Jack laughed.

He picked up the phone and called Jade. She answered the call shortly after.

"Jade, come here now. It's urgent," Jack said.

“Please, please don’t make the call!” Dora panicked. She realized by now that Darryl was not here to visit, and he must have been a part-time security guard here as well.

‘He can’t lose his job because of me!’ Dora thought as she stood forward.

“I’ll apologize to you all. Please don’t make the call. Darryl and I will leave right away.”

“It’s too late now.” Jack kept the phone in his pocket. “What about this? You and your boyfriend kneel on the floor and beg me? I won’t get him fired, and I’ll make him the head of security.”

“Do I really have to kneel?” Darryl smiled.

“Yes, kneel! If you kneel and beg, I won’t fire you,” Jack said.

“Do I really have to do it?” Darryl asked.

“Yes!” Jack scoffed. “Not only do you have to kneel, your girlfriend, Dora, has to kneel too. You talked back to me just now, and you upset me. I’ll fire you unless you kneel on the floor.”

As he was talking, a sexy figure in heels marched toward them hastily.

It was Jade.

Jade was wearing a white shirt and tight formal

skirt that showed off her alluring body lines and curves. She was already nearby, so when Jack called her saying there was something urgent, she came right away.

“Jade!” Jack walked toward her, smiling.

Jade nodded and glanced at Lisa. She knew her cousin well enough, and he was always picking up and playing with girls. She heard that Jack was looking to buy a villa lately, so she saved No. 99 for him, and gave him a discount. The price was reasonable after the discount.

“Jade, this security guard is so rude. Fire him!” Jack pointed at Darryl.

Jade followed the direction he pointed at and came eye to eye with Darryl.

“Wh-who did you say the security guard was?” Jade scowled.

“Him!” Jack pointed at Darryl. “Jade, fire him now! He’s so disgusting, and having him working here will bring down the class of this area.”

Slap!

Jade raised her hand and slapped Jack’s face real hard.

“Shut your mouth!” Jade was trembling with anger

as she walked up to Darryl. “Daddy...”

‘Huh?’ Jack was stunned. ‘Darryl was in his twenties. How...How was he a Daddy?’

Darryl smiled at Jade. “Your cousin’s so amazing. He asked me to apologize to him. What do you think? Should I kneel?”

At this instant, Jade’s mind went blank, and a shiver went through her body as her legs became jelly. She could not help but glare at Jack. Her cousin always caused problems!

Before Jade said anything, Jack’s face turned pale, and he knelt on the floor.

“Bro...Sir, I was wrong. I was ignorant to have spoken to you so rudely. Please, please, forgive me,” Jack stammered.

Jack was panicking. By now, anyone could see that Darryl was not a security guard. He seemed to be the owner of Windon Real Estate. Since his cousin called him Daddy, he could only call him Sir.

Meanwhile, Lisa followed Jack and knelt on the ground. Her face was pale white, and she was shivering so nervously that she could not utter a word.

‘Who was he?’ passersby thought.

The surrounding passersby stared in disbelief as

they held their breath, shocked.

“Huh? Didn’t you ask me to kneel? Why are you kneeling instead?” Darryl glanced at Jack and mocked.

“Sir, I was wrong. Please forgive me.” Jack smiled embarrassingly. As he spoke, he looked at Jade, hoping she could help him out.

“Daddy, how...What are we going to do about it?” Jade bit her lips and asked carefully.

To be fair, Darryl’s face was tough to read. He seemed to be smiling but not really, which made Jade even more anxious than she already was. After all, Darryl was the one who gave her everything she had now. If Darryl was angry, she might lose her job.

Watching the anxious look on Jade’s face, Darryl smiled, “How do I know? Isn’t he your cousin? You decide.”

Jade secretly let out a long sigh of relief. Darryl was not angry, so it was not too bad.

Chapter 262

With that in mind, Jade glared at Jack. “What are you still doing here? Get lost!”

Jack trembled and staggered up. He was sad and disheartened as he had anticipated to get the keys today and have a good time with Lisa. Yet this happened.

‘This was all Lisa’s fault for being such a gold digger!’ Jack thought.

After walking away, Lisa asked him softly, “Where are we going tonight?”

“Damn you! Go wherever you want, and get lost! I don’t want to see you again!” Jack yelled.

If it were not for her vanity, Jack would not have offended someone he could never afford to offend. He even got Jade into trouble. After yelling at Lisa, he snatched his hand back and marched away.

Meanwhile, Dora looked at Darryl with curiosity, ‘Who was he?’

Darryl did not feel like exploring the area any longer, so he said goodbye to Dora and went to get some fruits from the supermarket. He hummed

joyfully on his way back home.

However, the moment he stepped into the villa, Samantha walked out of her room. Seeing Darryl, she felt agitated. “How are you not ashamed to come home now? You left my daughter and had to steal things to survive.”

When he stole the phones, the police came here to inform them. It was so embarrassing for Samantha.

She looked at the fruit basket in Darryl’s hand.

“I won’t eat the fruits bought with stolen money. Go and divorce my daughter tomorrow morning, understand?” Samantha mocked.

Darryl smiled and stayed silent. In the past three years, Darryl was used to Samantha’s harsh words, so he was unperturbed. He placed the fruit basket on the table and glanced around the villa. It was so much better than where they lived before.

Seeing the calm look on Darryl, Samantha yelled, “I’m talking to you! Did you hear me? Are you deaf or dumb?”

‘This trash hadn’t come home in so long; he’s forgotten his manners,’ Samantha thought.

Meanwhile, Lily rushed out of her room. “Mom, please don’t make a scene. I asked him to come back.”

Samantha thought she heard it wrong.

‘What was wrong with Lily today? Why would she ask this trash to come home?’ she wondered.

“Why do I have such a disappointing daughter like you? Why would you miss trash like him? Didn’t the guy Donoghue send you lots of gifts when you met up with him? Didn’t you say he was amazing? Why are you back with this trash?” Samantha scoffed.

Lily blushed as she was embarrassed. She did not tell Samantha what happened a few days ago, as she did not want her to worry. Samantha still thought that Donoghue was a good man.

“Mom, don’t mention Donoghue again. I won’t leave Darryl,” Lily panicked.

This triggered Samantha. Since her daughter was acting strange, she mocked Darryl Darryl. “Darryl, tell me. What drugs did you feed my daughter? Why can’t she think straight?”

Darryl smiled but did not reply. He reclined nonchalantly on the sofa, not bothered by Samantha’s yelling.

Samantha stomped her feet and pulled on Lily’s wrist. “Come with me to the bedroom.”

Samantha had decided that no matter what it took,

she wants her daughter to divorce that trash today. Lily helplessly followed her mother to the room.

After both of them left, Darryl stood up slowly and walked towards the kitchen. He had been eating out the past few days, but now that he was home, he wanted to cook some dishes. He picked up a newly bought casserole dish in the kitchen and laughed to himself, 'Hmph, this casserole dish is just right for refining pills! Haha!'

Darryl put on an apron and started refining pills while making dinner.

Ten minutes later, Darryl covered the casserole dish and waited for the rice to be cooked. He was bored while waiting, so he took out the "Shadow Skills" from his bag. He did not have time to read it since the Cult Mistress gave it to him. Now was the perfect time to read it.

On the first page, the introduction stated: [The man who steals had been known as a thief, a gentleman of knowledge, a flying thief, and there are sects of stealing, such as...]

"Damn it! Why are they all the same? So pretentious," Darryl muttered, but it was not long before he was hooked on the contents of the book. The Cult Mistress was right; this was indeed an interesting read.

The stealing techniques used by modern-day thieves were considered unprofessional. This included using tools such as using long tweezers to steal a phone from a lady's bag.

However, there were at least a thousand types of stealing techniques recorded in the memoir. For instance, "Bump-steal" was when the thief stole the item as they bumped into their target. Another technique was the "Cut-steal," which was using a small cutting knife to cut open the lady's bag/cloth to take out the item. Another cool technique was the "Powder-steal," which was to apply powder on the skin, and when the target walked past the thief, the victim's mind would go blank for a second. In that one second, the thief would steal the item.

Darryl nodded with excitement. 'This was indeed a treasure! The person who wrote this was a genius!'

Chapter 263

The next morning, Lily woke Darryl up. “Wake up; we need to go to school.”

Darryl stretched and sat up slowly. He was so hooked by the book last night that he went to bed late.

Lily handed him clothes. “Go wash your face, and I’ll make you breakfast.” She turned and went to the kitchen.

Darryl was shocked by the warm and fuzzy feeling lingering in his heart. In the past three years, Lily had never made him breakfast. Darryl used to prepare their meals for them, but now her attitude had changed entirely. He was still not used to it.

Today was their first official day at The Hexad School. By the time Darryl arrived, almost every student from every class had arrived.

‘Weird. Why was Dax not in? Did he oversleep?’ Darryl thought.

As Darryl stepped into the class, he frowned. His headteacher taught the first period on human acupoints.

Katherine wrote: [Human Acupoints] on the board,

and started teaching. “The temple, also known as the strange acupoint outside our meridian, is a vital part of the human body and one of the deadly points. If one were hit on the temple, one would faint or die. The Baihui acupoint belongs to the central channel meridian, situated on the top of the head. In the cultivation world, when the cultivator mentions the ‘Three Flower Head,’ he’s referring to this acupoint.”

Katherine taught with a serious tone, and nobody dared to make a noise. After all, she was a Martial Marquis; who would want to cause trouble?

Katherine taught in detail, and the girls in the class listened with full attention. However, many of the boys were not paying as much attention as their eyes kept lingering on Katherine’s body, checking her out. Today, she was dressed in a tight dress, making her body look sexy and classy.

With a beautiful teacher on the podium, who could focus?

To be fair, she was beautiful, but that was not the most attractive part of her. It was her being a Level One Martial Marquis that made her stand out from the other beautiful women.

Darryl was in no mood to admire her. He held onto his phone anxiously.

‘What happened? Why was Dax not here?’ he thought as he sent Dax a message.

Not long after, his phone lit up with a message from Dax.

[Darryl, I’m Nancy. Something happened, and Dax is now in the hospital.]

‘Huh? Hospital, again?’ he thought.

Darryl’s face darkened as he replied, [What happened? Why was he admitted to the hospital again? Was it because of the Dixon family?”

Nancy replied quickly, [Not the Dixons. It was Brandon and Abby Guy.]

Brandon and Abby were Dax’s enemies for a very long time. If they didn’t hate Dax so much, they would not have kidnapped Nancy that time.

Brandon was still upset at not being able to get Nancy the other time. Brandon learned that Dax went to The Hexad School yesterday, and his wife Nancy took over, so Brandon took this opportunity to bring his men to the Sanders yesterday to kidnap her.

However, Grandpa Saul was there, too, and he would not let them kidnap his daughter-in-law. Since he had eaten the Godly pill, he had become a

Level One Martial Marquis, so he was able to fight and beat everyone. However, due to his old age, he still ended up being stabbed by Brandon before he left.

When Dax returned home that night and heard what happened to Grandpa, he was enraged and brought a hundred or so men to Brandon. Yet they fell into his trap.

Brandon knew Dax would come to seek revenge, so he had his men waiting for Dax. As expected, Dax was punched by Brandon once he got there, but he persisted and continued to fight.

When Dax made it back to the Sanders palace, he collapsed and has not woken up since

‘Damn it!’ Darryl cursed to himself.

If he saw this coming, he would not have sold the Godly pill to the Guy family.

Darryl took a deep breath and sent a message to Abby, [Did you cause trouble for Dax again?]

‘This woman hit Dax and still expected him to teach her how to refine pills? In her dreams!’ Darryl thought.

As Darryl was typing, he smelt a faint floral scent. He looked up instinctively and was caught off guard.

Somehow, Katherine had walked to his seat and

stood in front of him. She looked at him coldly.

Everyone in the class was smiling.

‘Haha! The live-in son-in-law is in trouble, again!’

Katherine slammed his table. “Darryl, was running a hundred laps too little for you? What do you think you’re doing? Who permitted you to play with your phone in class?”

Darryl nodded bitterly.

...

Rebecca looked out of the window from the second floor at the Darby mansion and bit her lips as she caressed her slightly rounded belly. The baby was Darryl’s, but she did not know if it was right to keep the baby.

In the yard, Old Master Darby sat on a chair as he watched his family members in front of him.

Seven people were practicing their sword moves against one another in the space in front of Old Master Darby. They were practicing the Big Dipper Formation. Among the seven of them were Florian, Yumi, Jack, and four other younger family members. Their steps kept on changing and overlapping, and the swords seemed to be all over the place. Their moves seemed to be all over the place at first, but you would realize that they were

all well synchronized when you looked closely. They frequently changed positions, from a cross formation, then parallel lines, and so on.

Chapter 264

He was sending the message behind his desk, so how did she realize?

Darryl let out a sigh. “Miss Katherine, I wasn’t playing with my phone. I’m just checking the time.”

With that, he was about to keep his phone.

“Don’t you talk back when you’ve made a mistake. Give me the phone,” Katherine declared with a cold tone that made it obvious her order was non-negotiable.

She snatched his phone. “Darryl, you’re already a live-in son-in-law. Why do you show no remorse? You should appreciate the opportunity to study at The Hexad School and work hard. Others can fool around because they’re from wealthy families; even if they don’t succeed, it’s okay. But you? You’re fooling around. No wonder everyone’s laughing at you!”

Katherine turned and walked back to the podium.

Darryl was helpless, and he mumbled, “What’s so bad about being a live-in son-in-law? I’m living just fine.”

Although his voice was soft, Katherine heard it

clearly, and so did the students around him.

‘Huh? The kid enjoyed being a live-in son-in-law?’ everyone thought.

Suddenly, a few students around him broke into laughter.

Katherine yelled with anger and pointed at the door. “You’re ridiculous! Go and stand by the door! You’re not allowed to sit for the rest of the day!”

‘Damn it; he was punished to run yesterday and asked to stand today. What an unlucky school!’ Darryl thought.

He let out a sigh, thinking that once he had stolen the scripture, he would not have to come to class again.

After Darryl walked out of the class, Katherine did not give him a second look.

“Since the class is almost over, I want to inform you all that we will be choosing a class monitor tomorrow.” Katherine glanced around the class with a faint smile. “When I’m not in, the class monitor will take charge of the class, such as the school activities, etc. So we need someone capable.”

The class was filled with chatter as she was about to pick a class monitor!.

Although it came with more responsibilities, it also

came with more power and authority. Everyone would have to listen and look up to the class monitor when Katherine was not around.

Many of the student's eyes sparkled with excitement.

...

They had quite a few classes for the rest of the day. After Katherine's Human Acupoints class, there was also Alchemy class, Literature, Art of war, and Formation class. However, these classes were taught by old men that dressed and looked just like those ancient men with a traditional way of thinking and stubborn attitude. Not only the guys, but even the girls were uninterested.

However, when the Alchemy class teacher appeared, everyone seemed excited. The teacher was named Isabella Monte. Like Katherine, she was a gorgeous woman in her thirties. She was also sexy and charming. Though she was different from Katherine with her gentle and soft temperament and soothing voice, which made her seem nicer, she was not strict at all. After one class with her, all the students fell in love with her.

After standing for the whole day, the bell finally rang, and Darryl let out a long sigh of relief.

'It's finally over!' he thought.

After standing for a whole day, his legs were so tired, and he felt like he could collapse at any time. However, a student rushed to the podium before everyone could leave. “Hey everyone, wait up. I’d like to say a few things.”

It was Declan Noel. He was a rich kid from another city.

He cleared his throat and spoke loudly, “Everyone, it must’ve been by fate that we were all allocated to the same class. I’d like to treat everyone to dinner tonight.”

When Katherine mentioned picking a class monitor, Declan wanted to be elected. He decided to treat everyone to dinner tonight to campaign for his election as class monitor tomorrow.

“Haha! Sounds good!” a student stood up, clapping.

It was Miles Morrison. Although his family was not poor, he was still nothing compared to the other rich kids. However, he was a smart kid. Within a day, he had made friends with Declan and started following him around. When Declan declared that he was treating everyone to dinner, Miles supported him right away.

Since Miles spoke up, everyone else joined in as well.

“Sure! I’ll come!”

“Thank you, Declan!”

In an instant, everyone was going. Declan smiled and looked at Miss Katherine, “Since everyone’s going, would you like to join us, too?”

Katherine considered it for a while before she nodded. “Sure, I’ll join you guys.”

Since everyone in the class was going, she would learn more about her students during this gathering. This would benefit her teaching in the future.

Declan was pleased when Katherine agreed. He waved. “Let’s go to the Oriental Pearl.”

Chapter 265

The Oriental Pearl was the best hotel in the city. Of course, he had to pick the best hotel since it was their first gathering.

Hearing that they were going to the Oriental Pearl, the class was in an uproar. Everyone walked out of the classroom happily. Once they got out of school, everyone went into their cars. Since most of the students were from wealthy families, most of them drove here and offered a ride to those who did not come with a car.

Since Lily sent Darryl here this morning, he needed a ride from someone else, but most of the cars were filled up by now. Darryl glanced around and saw that Declan's car still had an empty seat.

Declan was driving, and Miles was sitting in the passenger's seat. In the back were Dax's cousins, Daisy and Daphne, and there was an empty seat.

Darryl pulled open the car door and was about to go in, but Daisy pushed him away and looked at him with disgust. "Darryl, can't you go with someone else?"

"Why? All the other cars are filled up. I can only

take this car,” Darryl said.

Daisy stared at him. “Darryl, you’re lucky enough even to be invited to Declan’s dinner, but now you’re even thinking of sitting in his car? On top of that, you look dirty, so go and get a taxi!”

She did not want to sit in the same car as a live-in son-in-law.

Even Declan added in with a mocking tone, “Darryl, didn’t you see that the two pretty women don’t want to sit with you? I can’t help you. Go and get a taxi.”

After hearing Declan, the students in the other cars burst out laughing and looked at Darryl with disgust.

That was sad. Nobody liked this live-in son-in-law, so he had to take a taxi.

Darryl sighed. ‘These people were so materialistic nowadays. Wasn’t it just a meal?

He prepared to leave. Meanwhile, Katherine walked toward him and said, “Darryl, I’ll give you a ride.”

Katherine drove a pink-colored BMW. She saw that nobody liked Darryl, and as his teacher, she felt a responsibility to help him instead of letting him take a taxi. ①

Her car was filled with a faint floral scent. Sitting in

her car, Darryl felt more relaxed and took a few glances at her. She was very attractive, and the only downside to her was that she was too strict.

As she drove, she said, “Darryl, as you can see, the students in the class don’t like you and don’t want to sit in the same car as you. So you really have to work hard. If you don’t, they’ll always look down on you, and you’ll remain as the live-in son-in-law for the rest of your life.”

Darryl smiled bitterly, “Don’t worry, Miss Katherine. I’ll work hard. May I please have my phone back?”

She took away his phone and had not given it back to him.

Katherine’s face darkened, and glared at Darryl, “Didn’t you listen to what I said? I confiscated your phone, and now you’re asking for it back? I’ll give it back to you if you well-behaved tomorrow.”

Chapter 266

Watching the scene, Drake Darby could not restrain his excitement and said to Old Master Darby, “Dad, the Big Dipper Formation is so well choreographed! Their attacks and defenses were tight and solid. With this formation, the Darby family will live in glory!”

Although the three of them were only Level Three Masters, with the power of this formation, they would be able to fight a Martial Marquis!

Old Master Darby smiled as he exclaimed with happiness, “The Big Dipper Formation is indeed one of the best formations.”

Once they finished practicing, Florian kept his sword and walked toward him with excitement. “Grandpa, what do you think?”

“Good, good, very good! You have all improved a lot lately. This is all beyond my expectations. I’m very pleased, and I’m sure you all will bring glory to the Darby family,” Old Master Darby praised with a smile.

Florian was overjoyed by what Old Master Darby said.

“Don’t worry, Grandpa, I’ll work even harder!” he promised.

Old Master Darby nodded.

“Grandpa, there’s a visitor,” a voice rang up from behind.

Suddenly, everyone turned to look at the entrance as a group of women walked into the mansion. There were around ten or so women, with every one of them being extremely beautiful. The woman leading them was dressed in a white dress, holding a whisk in her hand.

In an instant, all the men in the family stared at the women without blinking. They were excited to have so many gorgeous women visiting them.

Old Master Darby stood up right away in shock as he saw them. “Ah, it’s Abbess Mother Serendipity from the Emei Sect. Welcome, welcome.”

Abbess Mother Serendipity was one of the six Elders of the Emei Sect and was a powerful woman with outstanding strength and refined temperament. The women behind her were the followers of the Emei Sect.

A few years ago, Old Master Darby met Abbess Mother Serendipity quite a few times.

She smiled and nodded at him. “Mister Darby, I’m

sorry for visiting you without telling you in advance.”

Old Master Darby smiled, “It’s no problem. May I know how I can help?”

Abbess Mother Serendipity smiled, “Mr. Darby, there are around 50 of us from the Emei Sect. May I ask if we could reside at your place?”

The Six Sect formed the Hexad School, and every sect allocated some of their Elders and followers to reside in Donghai City. Though all the Emei Sect followers were female, it would not be ideal living on the campus as they could be disturbed by the male students. After some discussions, the Emei Sect had decided to seek help from the Darby family for a place to stay. After all, Old Master Darby was a follower of the Shaolin Sect, so nobody would judge them if they remained at the Darby mansion.

“Mr. Darby, we won’t stay for free. We’ll pay rent,” she continued.

Old Master Darby frowned and seemed hesitant. It was not about the rent, but the fact that the Darby family had gotten involved with the Eternal Life Palace sect, which was a cult. If the Emei Sect followers lived with them, their secrets might be exposed easily.

This was very risky.

Though they came here sincerely, it would not be ideal to reject them. Old Master Darby was caught up with the dilemma.

Meanwhile, Florian walked toward him and said excitedly, “Grandpa, I’d agree if I were you. Abbess Mother Serendipity and the followers of the Emei Sect came all the way here to Donghai City; it must’ve been hard.”

Florian was naturally perverted, or else he would not have assaulted his sister-in-law. Now that there were so many gorgeous ladies staying at the mansion, of course, he would want to keep them in the estate. Every one of them was so beautiful, especially Abbess Mother Serendipity.

Chapter 267

If these Emei followers stayed at the Darby mansion, Florian might even stand a chance with some of them. Or so he thought.

Hearing that, Yumi came up behind him and pinched him. “What are you so excited about?”

Yumi knew her husband well enough to understand how perverted his mind was. If he wasn't perverted, he would not have assaulted Rebecca. This useless trash must have seen that the Abbess Mother Serendipity was gorgeous and began having dirty thoughts about her.

“What? I'm just concerned that the Emei followers have nowhere else to stay, and I feel bad for them,” Florian answered with a straight face.

Yumi stared at him but remained silent.

Old Master Darby waved his hand and smiled at the Abbess Mother Serendipity, “Alright, you all may stay at my mansion. Shaolin and Emei have always had a good relationship, which will further improve our bond, so why not? We have plenty of rooms here anyway.”

Since they were all here already, he had no choice

but to agree.

The Abbess Mother Serendipity was pleased. “Thank you, Mister Darby.”

...

At the Oriental Pearl, Declan shouted with confidence as everyone arrived, “Get me the biggest VIP room here!”

There were almost 70 of them, and the Oriental Pearl had the room to accommodate all of them.

“Sir, may I please ask for your VIP card?” a staff member asked with a smile.

The Oriental Pearl only had one room that big, and it was usually used to accommodate VIPs. They would rather have it vacant than to allow ordinary guests to use it. Since the owner, Wayne Woodall, was not in today, the staff required a VIP card to enable them to use it.

Declan was shocked and shook his head, “I don’t have a VIP card, but I don’t lack any money. Just arrange it for me, will you?”

“I’m very sorry, Sir. We only open this room to our VIPs,” the staff member apologized.

‘What? Only the VIPs get to use it?’ everyone thought as they looked at each other with mixed

emotions.

It was the first time most of them had come here to dine at the Oriental Pearl, and lots of the girls had already posted photos online to show off.

Declan was shocked, too. No wonder the Oriental Pearl was the fanciest hotel in Donghai City. You could not even have the VIP room without a VIP card.

Declan thought for a while and asked, “Can I make one now?”

‘It was just a VIP card. It shouldn’t be so hard,’ he thought.

The staff shook her head again, “I’m really sorry. We’ll need our boss’ signature to make one. Since he’s not in right now, you can only apply for a standard membership.”

‘Damn it, you needed the boss’ signature to make a card?’ he thought.

Declan wanted to go to another restaurant, but he saw that the girls did not want to leave. A few of them had already posted on their social media with the caption [My class monitor’s treating us to dinner at the Oriental Pearl.]

If he asked them to leave now, it would be embarrassing. As he began to panic, Circe Newman

finally said something after being quiet for the whole time, “Why don’t I try? I could try to call the owner.”

‘Wow! The class goddess spoke!’ everyone was shocked as they turned their gaze to her.

She was dressed in a tight top with dark denim jeans. She was cold, elegant, and very alluring. Everyone knew that Circe was the wealthiest in Kyoto; her contacts and connections were better than most of the rich kids in her class. If she spoke up, there must be a way.

Declan seemed pleased and smiled at Circe. “I’m so sorry to bother you with such a thing. Thank you!”

The staff was a woman, but even she could not help but look at Circe with admiration. “Sure, Madam. It would be great if you could phone our boss.”

Circe nodded and picked up her phone. She called Wayne, but after a while, all she heard was, “I’m sorry, the number you’re calling is unavailable.”

‘It didn’t go through,’ she thought.

Everyone heard the phone go to voicemail. The smile on Declan’s face disappeared, too.

The staff tried her best to smile and said apologetically, “I’m very sorry. I really don’t have the right to let you have the room without a direct

order from our boss.”

She believed that this beautiful lady knew her boss, Wayne, but it was the rule. Without a direct order from Wayne, nobody could open up the room.

Chapter 268

Circe remained emotionless as she nodded and kept her phone, stepping to the side.

The situation became awkward as it became apparent that they would not be able to dine here after all. Even Circe could not get in, so it was unlikely that anyone else could. By then, many of the girls shook their heads in disappointment, and so did Darryl.

He was standing at the end of the crowd, so nobody saw him. Suddenly, he walked toward the staff member with a card in his hand. "Hello, could you please check if you can open a room with this card?"

Wayne gave him this card a while ago, and he always carried it with him but never used it.

'Huh? Was this live-in son-in-law going crazy? Haha!' everyone thought.

The VIP room at the Oriental Pearl was the most luxurious room in the entire city and the only room that could fit over 50 guests.

'Declan and Circe could not get in, so what was this trash doing here? Is he joking around again?' people thought.

A few girls laughed, covering their mouths with their hands as they looked at Darryl like he was a joke.

“Tsk, tsk, Darryl. Why are you coming forward? To entertain everyone?”

Meanwhile, Daisy walked out from the crowd and took the card away from Darryl. “Aww, it’s a golden card. Darryl, are you joking? Hahaha!”

‘Only VIPs could attain the VIP card here at the Oriental Pearl. How could a live-in son-in-law have it? Who was he pretending to be? Haha!’ everyone thought.

Everyone burst into laughter.

“Never mind. Give it back to me,” Darryl said, as he tried to get back the card.

“No way! Are you scared now?” Daisy mocked as she handed the card to the staff. “C’mon everyone, let’s see if this card can get us the room.”

Everyone laughed as they surrounded the staff member.

“Ah...Is this....a Supreme VIP card?” the staff member thought in shock. At the same time, her eyes opened wide as her hand trembled slightly while she held onto the card.

No, she did not see it wrong. This was indeed the Supreme VIP card. There were less than three of them in the entire Oriental Pearl.

The staff member was stunned for a moment. She could see that the guests in front of her were from wealthy families, so it made sense for them to dine here. However, she did not expect one of them to be a Supreme VIP.

The Supreme VIP was allowed to spend as much as he wanted at this hotel and got the best service as well as other benefits. Of course, getting into the VIP room was no big deal at all compared to that.

Transfixed, the staff stared at Daisy blankly and said excitedly, “May I know if this card is yours?”

Daisy did not catch the change of tone in the staff’s voice, so she shook her head and laughed as she pointed at Darryl, “Why would I have a card like this? Of course, it’s not mine. It’s his.”

‘It must have been a fake card. Of course, she would not admit to possessing a fake card like this. Haha!’ Daisy laughed to herself.

The rest of the class laughed with her as well.

By then, they were expecting the staff to tell Darryl off.

However, the staff suddenly did a ninety-degree

bow. “Sir, I’m so sorry for not seeing you earlier. I didn’t know you were a Supreme VIP here. I’m very sorry. I’ll get your room ready, right away.”

Suddenly, everyone was shocked.

‘This card was legit? That it could open the VIP room? Did-did the staff member call this a Supreme VIP card?’ everyone wondered in disbelief.

Everyone stared at Daryl with wide eyes in disbelief and curiosity.

‘Was this kid not a live-in son-in-law? What happened? Perhaps this card belonged to the Lyndon family,’ they thought.

That could not be right. Although the Lyndon family was wealthy, they were a small family and would not be able to possess a Supreme VIP card. There were less than three of them in the entire Donghai City.

Declan could not hold back any longer.

“Darryl, where did you get the card from?” he asked.

Chapter 269

‘Perhaps he stole the card?’ Declan wondered.

Watching doubt cross everyone’s face, Darryl replied. “It’s not mine. It’s my boss’.”

At first, everyone remained silent, but seconds later, everyone burst into laughter.

‘Hahaha! So it was his boss’,’ everyone thought.

‘Haha! It was his boss’ after all! He was just a kid playing around with his boss’s card! What an opportunist!’ Declan thought.

‘Damn you all! I’m kind enough to get you the room, and you guys decide to mock me for that? Whatever. Why would I care about these people,’ Darryl thought as he smiled.

After going inside the room, Declan asked the waiters to enter.

“Come here. Everyone, please pick some dishes. I want everyone to have a great time tonight!” he announced.

Swiftly, the waiters brought them the menus. Since Katherine was there, nobody dared to pick anything, and they all handed her the menus.

Katherine smiled, appearing less strict than she was back in class, as she pushed the menus away. "I'm fine with anything. You all pick."

Declan handed the menus to the girls. Circe, as always, sat there coldly, and the other girls around her were too intimidated to make an order.

However, Daisy and Daphne were not ashamed at all. They took the menus.

"I heard the wines here are not bad at all," Daisy commented as she flipped through the menu.

The girl beside her took a glimpse and nodded, "Wow, it's Romanee Conti! We won't be able to drink this anywhere else. Let's get this!"

They discussed for a while before smiling at Declan. "Declan, we ordered some slightly expensive wines. Is that okay with you?"

Declan waved it off. "My two goddesses are so funny. Of course, it's fine! Order whatever you want!"

'Romanee Conti?' Darryl thought, laughing to himself as he sat to the side.

He recalled how William Lyndon made a fool out of himself because of this wine as he was almost unable to pay for the dinner. One bottle costs at

least a million bucks.

Declan's wallet was getting thinner by the end of the night. The two sisters were not ashamed at all as they ordered ten or so of the wines.

When the wines arrived, Declan glimpsed at the wine's price when he was pouring it for them, and he was caught off guard.

'Damn, a million per bottle?' he thought.

Suddenly he felt his heart sink. The drinks alone would cost him ten million bucks tonight. However, no matter how upset he was, he still put on a fake smile to cover it up.

"I'd like to make a toast to celebrate our first gathering!" Declan raised his glass as he smiled.

Everyone raised their glasses.

"Oh, look at this. Isn't Declan the perfect class monitor anyone could ask for?" Miles announced as they clinked their glasses.

Everyone agreed instantly. Anyone could see that Declan only treated them to dinner because of the election tomorrow. Watching the reaction of his peers, Declan was excited but tried to refrain from showing it.

"Nah, I only want to get to know everyone better,"

he said, shaking his head as he winked at Miles for speaking up for him.

Declan was ecstatic. They continued drinking for quite a bit. Even Katherine drank quite a few rounds because of everyone's good mood. Though she was not a good drinker, she started becoming flush after a few glasses. She seemed extraordinarily charming.

The boys in the class felt so lucky to have a charming teacher and many beautiful female classmates.

Chapter 270

Circe sat there cold and silently like a blooming orchid, exuding an air of grace that stood out from the crowd. Though nobody found her weird or peculiar, many of the guys wanted to know her better, but they did not have the courage to do so.

Everyone was getting in the mood, and Declan stood up smilingly with an elegant box in his hands. He walked towards Katherine and said politely, “Miss Katherine, today happens to be the Teacher’s Day, and I’d like to thank you for being our teacher. This is a gift for you.”

Suddenly, the room was filled with exclamations of amazement. Declan was well-prepared, indeed. He even prepared a gift for Miss Katherine. It was quite clear that he was determined to become the class monitor.

Katherine remained calm and smiled. “Declan, I’m already very pleased that you’re treating us to dinner. I can’t accept this.”

Declan was indeed a bright, smart, and likable student. He even knew today was Teacher’s Day and prepared her a gift. However, so many students were watching, and Katherine felt bad for accepting

the gift.

Declan shook his head with a smile. “This is a little something I really want you to keep, especially on such a special occasion like today.”

He opened the box.

Suddenly, everyone stared at what was inside the box with shock and surprise. Inside the box laid a yellow pill. Even Katherine could not help but take a closer look at it. She thought Declan would give her a bracelet or jewelry as a gift, but she never thought it would be a pill!

Darryl frowned upon seeing the pill. He saw the color and texture of the pill, which resembled a Spirit Petrification Elixir. According to the “Infinite Elixir Manual,” this was one of the top pills for cultivators. However, the color of the pill seemed lighter than what it should look like.

‘Perhaps he was wrong?’ Darryl thought.

Meanwhile, Declan glanced around at his classmates with a proud expression.

“Miss Katherine, this is called the Spirit Petrification Elixir. I bought it from a wandering cultivator back home. Miss Katherine, this pill is only meant for a Martial Marquis. This would not have any effect on cultivators below that level, but

for anyone that's a Martial Marquis and above, they will experience a rebirthing effect.

'A rebirthing effect?' everyone wondered.

The room was in an uproar as everyone seemed more in shock than before. Katherine was already a Level One Martial Marquis, but after taking this pill with the rebirthing effect, she would become even more intimidating.

Although Katherine remained calm, she was very excited after hearing that. She had heard about this pill but had never seen it before. Declan was right to say that the Spirit Petrification Elixir was meant for cultivators, who were at least a Martial Marquis, to strengthen their abilities. A Martial Marquis who had this pill would be much stronger than a Martial Marquis without it.

Declan took out the pill and handed it to Katherine. "Miss Katherine, this is a gift I specially prepared for you. If you don't take it, it would be a waste for me to keep it anyway."

After hearing what he said, Katherine accepted the pill with a smile.

"Miss Katherine, why don't you take it now? Then, we can see what a rebirthing effect is," Miles stood up and suggested.

The rest of the class nodded in agreement as their

eyes filled with anticipation. They were all wondering when they would be able to reach the level of a Martial Marquis.

Noticing everyone's looks of anticipation, Katherine smiled and prepared to eat the pill.

“Don't!” Darryl stood up, trying to stop her.

“What is it, Darryl?” Katherine asked, confused.

Everyone looked at Darryl with a frown on their faces.

‘What was this live-in son-in-law doing this time?’ everyone thought.

Darryl took a deep breath and explained, “Miss Katherine, I'm afraid this pill won't work. Don't eat it.”

Everyone stared in disbelief.

Declan was furious as he scoffed, “Darryl, what the f*ck is wrong with you this time?”

Chapter 271

Miles chimed in, insulting Darryl. “A mere live-in son-in-law—how dare you question Declan’s elixir? You’re just jealous, aren’t you.”

Darryl snickered as he looked at Declan.

“Indeed, the elixir you gave her was the Spirit Petrification Elixir. However, did you know that this elixir needs to be kept in a dark, cool, and humid environment? It cannot be exposed to the sun. The Spirit Petrification Elixir is originally a deep dark yellow color. It turns light yellow when exposed to the sun. Since yours is light yellow, I assume it was already exposed to the sun by the time you purchased this from the wandering cultivator,” Darryl explained nonchalantly. The room fell silent.

“So what if it has been exposed to the sun?” Declan questioned with a laugh. “Is it still effective?”

‘This pretentious Darryl—thinking that people would believe the nonsense he spews.’

Darryl shook his head. “I don’t think it will lose its effect, but there will be some changes in its properties.”

“What would happen if one consumes it?” Declan sneered.

“I wouldn’t know,” he chuckled.

Indeed, Darryl does not know. He had only skimmed through the Spirit Petrification Elixir section in the Infinite Elixir Manual, not studying it thoroughly. He does not know what would happen if someone consumed it after it had been exposed to sunlight.

“Haha! you can’t explain, can you?” Declan snickered, seeing how Darryl could not muster an explanation. “You can’t go on with your lies anymore. Here I thought that you were an expert.”

The others burst into laughter. This pretentious man was such an attention-seeker.

Katherine sighed as she consumed the elixir, refusing to believe Darryl’s words.

Miles stood up and jeered, “Darryl, everyone knows who you are. I’m begging you; stop pretending to be an expert. Look at you! You can’t even make up any lies. I’m worried about you.”

Haha!

The entire room erupted in laughter once more.

“Let’s not get worked up by this live-in son-in-

law,” Daisy detested. “He’s just a know-it-all clown; an absolute idiot.”

Katherine glared at Darryl with disapproval. She did not think that he would dare to make such a thing up. What a disappointment he was.

Everyone ignored Darryl after the debacle, continuing to drink and chat with each other.

Darryl sat to the side. Feeling bored, he left to the washroom. As he exited the room, he caught a glimpse of Miles and Declan standing in a corner in a secretive deep conversation.

He crept closer to them out of curiosity to eavesdrop.

“Bloody hell. Daisy, that b*tch! She ordered Romanée-Conti. I’m afraid this meal is going to cost about twenty million bucks or more,” Declan said solemnly as he lit a cigarette.

Miles jumped when he heard the figure. “That much?!” His own pocket money was about tens of thousands of bucks per month. This meal costs twenty million, possibly more.

Declan took a puff of the cigarette. He rolled his eyes and said, “You think? F*ck, before I enrolled in Hexad’s I just asked for twenty million from my dad. That might not even cover this meal!”

Declan was worried. He thought that buying a meal for his entire class in Donghai City's best restaurant would only cost about a million bucks or so. Who knew that eating at the Oriental Pearl would be way beyond his expectations? The dinner was coming to an end, but he could not afford it. It was too embarrassing.

Miles pondered momentarily, and his eyes lit up with hope.

"Declan, don't worry," he confidently reassured. "I have an idea! When it's time to pay, we'll act drunk. I'm sure the other rich brats in our class can afford to foot the bill."

"Of course, don't put your hopes on Darryl. That live-in son-in-law is a loser."

Bloody hell.

'What the hell did I do to deserve that?' Darryl thought. He could not help but swear under his breath.

"Yeah, f*ck that Darryl," he jeered. "All I did was give Miss Katherine an elixir, yet he had plenty to say about it."

He returned to the topic at hand. He shook his head and asked, "How are we going to act drunk? This meal costs a lot. Who can afford it?"

School had started two days ago, so Declan knew about each classmates' family financial status. Though they were all rich, only a few of them could afford to spend twenty million bucks in a short period.

Miles scratched his head, lost in deep thought. He suddenly slapped his thigh and exclaimed, "Yes! How about Circe Newman? She's the daughter of Kyoto's Newman family. Twenty million bucks is a small amount to her. When we act drunk—and if no one coughs up the money—I'm sure she will offer to pay!"

"I don't think this is appropriate," Declan frowned. Circe was the Belle of Hexad's. She was a goddess among her classmates. Expecting her to pay on his behalf was too embarrassing, not to mention emasculating.

Miles read his thoughts. "Don't worry, just apologize to Circe in school tomorrow," he offered. "Tell her that you were drunk and that you should've paid for it instead. This can be an opportunity for you to get closer to her. You could even use the excuse of paying her back to get her phone number!"

Declan's eyes sparkled while hearing the plan Miles thought of. He patted his back and smiled, "You're

a good man to even think of such an idea. Let's do it!"

Haha!

He could solve his current problem and get the contact of a gorgeous girl in the process—killing two birds with one stone!

They happily went back into the dining room.

Darryl—who listened to their entire conversation—suddenly had an idea. This guy does not have enough money yet he wants to buy a meal for everyone at the Oriental Pearl? Such a phony. He even expected Circe Newman to pay for it? Dream on.

With that, Darryl returned to the dining room.

Chapter 272

Circe was headed to the washroom just as Darryl entered the dining area.

A playful thought entered his mind, letting out a hushed chuckle.

‘If I were to steal Circe’s phone and purse, she won’t be able to pay. Let’s see what happens to Declan then!’

He bumped into Circe. At the same time, he smoothly swiped her phone and purse.

Success!

He was reading up on the Shadow Skills yesterday. Using it in practice for the first time was slightly nerve-racking, but thankfully, it worked.

Darryl was giddy with excitement on the inside, but he pretended to be embarrassed. He apologized to Circe, “I’m so sorry. I was in a rush and didn’t notice you!”

Darryl took a good look at her up close. Gorgeous. Extremely gorgeous.

During the dinner, Circe drank the least, but her exquisite face was still slightly flushed. Combined

with her ice-cold personality, it was somehow charmingly seductive.

Darryl's movement was fast and discreet. She did not realize that her phone and purse were missing.

"It's fine," she muttered, walking away right after.

Whether Darryl did it on purpose or not, she did not care. However, the other guys in the room were unhappy.

Bloody hell. How dare this loser bump into a gorgeous lady like her?

A mixture of envy and annoyance, they started insulting Darryl.

"Darryl, are you blind? Can't you see where you are going?"

"You did it on purpose, didn't you? What a retard."

Insults after insults were hurled at Darryl, but he ignored them all and returned to his seat.

As people were about to leave after the dinner ended, Declan slumped onto the table, pretending to be drunk and unconscious.

The rest were flabbergasted. He was supposed to be buying dinner, how could he be drunk and unconscious? If he does not pay, no one can leave.

Miles approached Declan in a faux-drunken state

and gave him a pat on the back.

“Declan, Declan! It’s time to go!” he yelled.

Declan did not move, pretending not to hear him.

‘Wow, these two can really act.’

Darryl watched them with amusement.

The others—utterly oblivious to their plan—thought that Declan was genuinely wasted.

Someone dragged Miles away from Declan. “It’s fine. He’s out cold. There’s no point in yelling,” he exclaimed.

Miles asked helplessly, “What should we do? We haven’t paid for the meal.” He then asked the waiter, “Please let us know the total amount.”

The waiter walked in with the bill.

“Sir, the total is twenty-eight million, three hundred and fifty thousand,” he answered.

This meal cost close to thirty million!?

Everyone gasped. Though they were from wealthy families, they had never spent that much on a meal.

Miles was stunned.

“What the f*ck?” he fumed. “My pocket money for half a year is barely five million bucks!”

He tried to show that he wanted to pay, but he did not have enough cash to foot the bill.

The rest were stunned to silence. Who was going to cough up thirty million bucks?

“Wait, didn’t we use Darryl’s VIP card to reserve this room?” someone suddenly blurted. “Can’t we just put it on his tab? Declan can return Darryl the money tomorrow.”

Everyone nodded in agreement. Darryl snickered under his breath.

‘This bunch of bastards. First, they insulted me for no reason. Now, they use me when they need my help.’

The waiter apologized, “I’m so sorry. We cannot put it on a tab, even for VIP guests.”

The crowd fell silent once more. If they could not put it on the tab, it would be hard to deal with.

“I’ll pay for it,” Circe spoke up.

Thank goodness for Circe. They all cheered in their hearts. She is from Kyoto’s Newman family; this should be a small sum for her.

Just as she was about to reach for her phone, she frowned. Odd, her phone and purse were gone.

What happened?

Chapter 273

If it were other ladies who lost their phone, they would have been frantic.

Circe Newman was no ordinary woman. She was incredibly calm when she realized her phone and purse were missing.

Darryl complimented her silently. It was no wonder that she was the Belle of Hexad's. Her aura of calmness and confidence was unrivaled.

What happened? Did she lose her phone?

The rest were confused. If Circe could not pay, would everyone have to split the bill?

Declan could not put up an act anymore, being slumped on the table the entire time. What was happening? Circe could not pay? If he continued faking being drunk, people were bound to talk. He would have to face the music.

He was reluctant, but he yawned and stood up slowly. He pretended to be surprised. "Oh, I'm so sorry! How did I fall asleep? I'm sure everyone had fun today! I'll go pay."

F*ck. It looked like he had to beg his family for the

money.

Declan scratched his head. “Guys, this meal costs thirty million. My money is locked in shares,” he admitted. “I’d have to get my dad to transfer the cash to me.”

He took a deep breath as he took his phone and dialed his father. His father was Jason Noel, a relatively famous businessman in the food processing business.

The phone call went through. Declan forced a smile as he muttered nervously, “Dad, could you wire another thirty million for me?”

He had to get the money somehow, even if it means getting an earful from his father.

“What? More money?” Jason—on the other end of the phone call—was furious. He reprimanded, “You bastard. I just gave you thirty million before you enrolled in Hexad’s, and you’ve already spent it in a few days? You’re a huge failure and a disappointment!”

Jason was livid. He worked hard his entire life, yet this bastard son spent tens of millions in a short period.

Declan was almost in tears, but he could not let his classmates know. He pretended as if nothing had

happened.

“Yes, dad, I have about seven periods per school day. Don’t worry!” he trembled.

“Bloody hell, bastard! Are you trying to aggravate me? I’m warning you. I’ll transfer thirty million bucks to you, but don’t even think about asking me for more money within the next six months!” He hung up abruptly.

“My dad is worried for me,” he chuckled awkwardly. “He asked how many periods of classes I had in a day.”

His phone beeped as he spoke to his classmates. Jason transferred the money to him. Bloody hell, this meal costs twenty-something million, and he has to get a scolding from his father. This was too hard to bear!

Declan’s heart bled tears when the money left his account balance.

As the rest left the dining room, Daisy asked Katherine, “Miss Katherine, do you feel anything after consuming the Spirit Petrification Elixir?”

“Nothing whatsoever.” Katherine shook her head.

They were stunned. The effects should have been immediate. Could Darryl have been right about the elixir being ineffective?

“Not all elixirs take effect immediately,” she added.
“Perhaps by tomorrow.”

Declan made it seem so grand while giving her the elixir in front of the entire class. How could it have been a fake?.

“Darryl, please don’t spew any nonsense from now on. How could the elixir from Declan be fake?”

Katherine scoffed. “You’re lucky that Declan is a forgiving person. If it were someone else, it might be worse for you.”

Darryl laughed in response.

Declan walked over slowly as he finished paying the bill.

Chapter 274

Miles looked proud and arrogant as he stood behind Declan. “This meal costs about thirty million. It’s not that much for Declan,” he boasted.

What a total ass-kisser.

The rest nodded in agreement. Declan adored being praised, but he was bitter inside. Twenty-something million gone in an instant. Furthermore, he could not ask for more money for the next six months. At least, he would score the position of class monitor tomorrow.

Everyone left in their own cars, yet no one was willing to give Darryl a lift. Katherine walked over reluctantly and grumbled, “Fine, I’ll give you a lift.”

Darryl laughed and nodded.

In the car, Katherine was surprised to learn that Darryl lived at Peak Mansions.

Peak Mansions was Donghai City’s most luxurious area. Darryl was just a live-in son-in-law, so how could he afford to live there?

“Yes, my wife bought the house,” he nodded. However, he was the one that gave her the money

via her live stream.

“Darryl, the money belongs to your wife. You should not take advantage of it,” Katherine lectured, as if she suddenly understood something.

There she went again. Why would such a gorgeous teacher like her nag so much? They were not even in school. What was with all the life lessons?

Darryl smiled bitterly as he nodded. “Understood, Miss Katherine.”

Katherine nodded in return. Suddenly, she started frowning and felt sick to her stomach. She began to sweat, panicking slightly. What was happening to her?

Noticing that there was something wrong, Darryl asked, “Miss Katherine, are you alright?”

“I’m not sure as well,” she shook her head. “I don’t usually drink, so it could be that I’m slightly drunk.”

Darryl grimaced. From the looks of it, she did not seem drunk. She appeared to be poisoned, though it was nothing too serious. Could it be from the Spirit Petrification Elixir? The elixir had lost its primary effect, so consuming it would cause other side effects. As to what kind of side-effects, Darryl was unclear. He needed to consult the Infinite Elixir Manual.

When Darryl reached home, he immediately searched for the Infinite Elixir Manual. When he glanced through the Spirit Petrification Elixir, he was utterly stunned.

The Infinite Elixir Manual stated in detail that once the Spirit Petrification Elixir was exposed to the sun, its properties would go through changes. It was not similar to the Godly pill, where it would become a deadly poison once it has lost its effect.

However, the Spirit Petrification Elixir worked differently. Unlike the Godly pill, once it lost its effect, the side-effects were merely sweat and dizziness. The next day, the cultivator would lose two rank levels. They would continue losing two ranks daily until the cultivator becomes an ordinary person.

Katherine was a Level One Master Marquis, but she would be a Level Four Master General tomorrow and a Level Two Master General the following day. Within a week, she would turn into an ordinary person.

“F*ck,” he gasped. The side-effects were mortifying.

Ring! Ring!

Darryl jumped. He realized he still had Circe

Newman's phone. He forgot to return them to her at the Oriental Pearl.

Who would be calling her so late at night? Out of curiosity, Darryl answered the call. He was stunned.

Chapter 275

It was a regular voice call. It was a video call from a girl named Evelyn Featherstone.

Darryl wanted to ignore the call, but his hand trembled—accidentally picking up the call! When the call connected, his eyes widened.

F*ck! The caller was a pretty girl who had just finished showering.

‘What is happening? I didn't mean to look!’ Darryl swallowed hard, finding it hard to resist. ‘The young girl had a great figure. Why does she look so familiar?’ Darryl pondered.

Ah! It was the granddaughter of the old man who bought a Godly pill for five billion bucks at Roger's Auction. He was a high-ranking member from the Eternal Life Palace sect!

“Ah!” Evelyn screamed. She did not expect to see a man answering her call. She gasped, ending the call immediately.

‘What was happening? Circe did not have a boyfriend, so who was the man on the other side? Also, why did he look so familiar? Was that not Darryl Darby, the man who saved grandpa?’

Evelyn blushed.

Evelyn and Circe were good friends. The Newman family joined the Eternal Life Palace a year ago, unbeknownst to many.

The Eternal Life Palace recruited many families recently, just like how Brian Cunningham recruited the Darbys.

It was Evelyn who recruited the Newmans. Naturally, she and Circe became best friends in no time.

She had just finished showering. She had not spoken to Circe in a few days, so she gave her a video call. She did not expect Darryl to pick up the call. Not to mention, he also saw her nude!

She sent him a text through Circe's phone saying, "Is this Darryl Darby?"

Darryl was still stunned by what he saw. He could not deny that Evelyn had a great figure.

Another message came through. It read, "Why do you have Circe's phone?"

Darryl thought of a response. "I picked it up," he replied.

"Return it to her immediately tomorrow," Evelyn ordered. "Also, nothing happened here. If you dare

“speak about this, you’ll have to face the consequences.”

Are all beautiful women so ferocious?

“What if I don’t?” he replied playfully. ‘Why was this young girl trying to threaten me?’

Evelyn replied immediately with one word—“Death!”

F*ck, she was vicious.

Darryl turned off the phone. He could not help but think back to the Roger’s Auction and how this young girl whipped out an Eternal Life Palace token. She scared the Roger’s family half to death. Hopefully, she will not want revenge for this.

At that, Darryl fell asleep.

The next day. The weather was good, roughly about 86 degrees Fahrenheit.

Darryl had a good sleep, feeling well-rested. He hummed as he made his way to class. As he entered, he noticed a new student with a buzzcut sitting in the first row—it was Trent Young.

Trent Young was released from prison yesterday. He heard that the six orthodox sects had established The Hexad School and immediately enrolled through his connections. Even though he

owns a Martial Club, he wanted to become stronger.

Upon seeing him, Darryl was amused. Not only was Trent enrolled at Hexad's, he was also in the same class as him.

Trent was flabbergasted. Why the hell was Darryl here as well?

Previously at the Lyndons' residence, he flirted with Lily, in which he received a beating from Darryl. While in prison, he was beaten up by Darryl again.

How unfortunate was he that he met him again in Hexad's? Trent could not look Darryl in the eye.

Darryl was about to take his seat when Circe approached him. Circe was wearing black, figure-hugging skinny jeans. She still had an arrogant, icy aura.

Chapter 276

Circe was not only the prettiest in her class, but also the belle of Hexad's. She was the center of attention wherever she went.

She walked toward Darryl. Everyone's eyes were on Darryl as she walked toward him. Extending her arm, she demanded, "Darryl, return my phone."

That morning, Evelyn dialed the Newmans to inform Circe that Darryl had her phone.

What? Darryl took Circe's phone?

Everyone was partly confused and partly shocked.

Darryl awkwardly handed the phone back to Circe. "I'm so sorry," he chuckled. "I wanted to return it to you last night, but you had already left."

He thought of the excuse last night.

"Why would my phone be with you?" she frowned.

She was outraged. Darryl had her phone the entire night, so he must have had gone through her phone! Circe rarely got angry, but she was fuming.

She glared at Darryl. Any ordinary person would have cowered in fear, but Darryl calmly muttered, "

I picked it up.”

Picked it up?

Circe was suspicious. “Impossible,” she snapped. “My phone goes wherever I go. I would not have dropped it.”

She did not have a habit of playing games on her phone. She would only use her phone for calls. She explained that she did not touch her phone once while at the Oriental Pearl yesterday. If he did indeed pick it up, did he pick it from her pocket?

‘F*ck, it’s getting hard to lie my way through this,’ Darryl thought. He smiled bitterly.

“Darryl, come clean,” Miles sneered. “Did you steal Circe’s phone? Were you planning to sell it for a quick buck?”

Darryl must have been so broke to a point where he would steal someone’s phone to sell off!

Darryl laughed but said nothing. This idiot, Miles. Why was he everywhere? His voice was loud. Everyone, including those outside class, heard him loud and clear. All eyes were on Darryl.

At that, Trent stood up. “Did you all know I met Darryl while in prison?” he laughed. “Guess what was he in for?”

Trent initially kept his distance, but it seemed that

Darryl had a bad reputation in class. Everyone looked down on him, the live-in son-in-law. What was there to be afraid of?

Everyone stared at Trent as he spoke. Trent was the owner of a Martial Club, and he was hot-tempered. Being locked up in prison was inevitable and even seemed normal for a person like him. However, Darryl was a live-in son-in-law. All he did was house chores, so why would he be thrown into prison?

“Why?” Miles snickered. “Do tell us!”

“What do you think?” Trent smiled smugly. “It was because he stole two iPhones! Also, I heard that he was arrested the moment he left the store! How dumb is he?”

Haha! It was hilarious. Stealing phones? Haha!

The entire class roared with laughter. A few were almost in tears. This idiot was amusing, locked up in prison for theft!

Amidst the laughter, a few girls looked at Darryl with disdain. How poor was he that he had to resort to stealing phones?

Chapter 277

“Darryl.”

Declan stood up as he jeered, “You can’t change your ways after all! You still steal out of habit! Are you not one bit embarrassed? You said you found Circe’s phone. Can you swear that you found it?”

F*ck. Darryl was trapped. He smiled bitterly and admitted, “Alright, I stole your phone yesterday.”

Circe bit her lip as she menacingly glared at Darryl. She had never loathed anyone so badly in her life. This was the first time that someone had stolen something from her.

It was an insult to her to be in the same class with a lowly thief like him.

Darryl scratched his head. “Circe, I don’t care what you think of me. I stole your phone for a reason. Yesterday at the Oriental Pearl, Declan knew he couldn’t afford to pay for the meal. He wanted to make you pay for it, so I stole your phone to prevent it from happening.”

‘I saved you from spending twenty million bucks!’

Circe’s expression was unchanged. She did not

believe Darryl.

There was a burst of laughter. Has Darryl lost his marbles? Why did he think of such a childish excuse? How could Declan not be able to afford it?

Declan was shocked when he heard Darryl's reason. He frowned. How did Darryl know about his plan yesterday? He looked at Miles suspiciously. Miles was equally stunned as he shook his head, denying that he had told Darryl.

Declan panicked, but he laughed, "Darryl, just admit that you stole her phone. Could you find a better reason? I can't afford it? Do I look like the type of person who could not come up with a mere twenty million bucks?"

Darryl could only let out a chuckle.

Katherine entered the classroom. Looking at the commotion, she asked, "What's going on?"

Everyone looked at Darryl.

"Miss Katherine, Darryl stole someone's phone," Declan pointed at Darryl.

Stealing phones?

"Declan, stop bullying Darryl," she frowned. "He might be a live-in son-in-law, but I believe that he won't steal phones. Stop this at once." Katherine

defended Darryl.

Declan was unsatisfied with her response. Just as he was about to respond, Katherine walked up to the platform and slammed the textbook onto the table. "Settle down. I have an important announcement to make."

Katherine scanned her surroundings. "I guess you've seen the news. Recently there has been a strong typhoon, which caused a lot of villages to be flooded," she explained. "Many have lost their homes. We, as the Six orthodox sects, have to help the poor."

Katherine turned around and wrote something on the board. "The school has decided that we will raise funds for the affected villages," she continued. "I want everyone to donate to the best of their abilities."

Donation? The class started discussing among themselves.

"To encourage students to donate, the school has decided to reward the highest donor in each class," she asserted. "A substantial reward."

What? A reward? Everyone's eyes opened wide in excitement. The Hexad School was no ordinary school. The reward must be something magical, an elixir of sorts.

At the same time, someone asked, “Miss Katherine, we don’t have cash with us. How do we donate?”

Everyone had the same question in mind. They were all rich, but they rarely carried cash.

“Don’t worry,” Katherine reassured. “The school has created an online donation platform. You can transfer the money to the school’s bank account.”

Chapter 278

Katherine stuck a QR code print-out onto the blackboard.

The students scanned the QR code and started donating. Some donated two hundred thousand, some five hundred thousand. The generous ones contributed a million bucks.

They had their hearts set on the reward for the highest contributor, as what Miss Katherina had said.

“How much did you donate?”

“Wow! Five hundred thousand.”

“I’m not bad as well. I donated six hundred thousand.”

Everyone was proud of themselves for donating. Katherine was right. The school’s online platform had a list that showed which student contributed the most.

Everyone’s eyes were glued to the list.

Suddenly, a student from another class donated a million and eight hundred thousand bucks.

“Look! Declan donated two million!” someone

yelled.

The class was in an uproar. The list stated that Declan Noel from Class Sixteen was the current highest donor at two million.

All eyes were on Declan. Two million. This man had to be rich.

Katherine nodded in approval. This class did not disappoint her at all. Even though they were not overly passionate about their studies, they had a charitable heart.

Everyone praised Declan. He was proud as well. He dangled his phone in front of Darryl and said, “Look, Darryl, I donated two million. Weren’t you the one that said I couldn’t afford it?”

At that, he lightly punched Darryl in the chest. “You lowly live-in son-in-law,” he spat. “When you steal phones, don’t use me as an excuse. Isn’t it pathetic?”

The other classmates chipped in.

“Yes! Does Declan look like he is short of money?” They each took a jab at Darryl.

Katherine started to believe their words. She glared at Darryl and asked, “Darryl, did you really steal someone’s phone?”

She woke up in a bad mood since she found out she

had dropped two levels for no reason. Her spirit was worsened by Darryl.

Miles stood up and said, “Miss Katherine, Darryl stole Circe’s phone!”

The others nodded in support.

Katherine was filled with disappointment. “Darryl, I just defended you,” she reprimanded. “I refused to believe that you would steal. It is fine if you are poor, just do it with some dignity. Do you understand?”

Darryl’s expression darkened as he looked at her. “Miss Katherine, hand me the phone. I want to donate,” he declared.

Haha! This idiot wants to donate? He was so poor that he resorted to stealing phones. What could he afford to contribute? Was he trying to protect his self-esteem? The class laughed at him.

Katherine said sternly, “Darryl, I will return your phone on two conditions. One, do not play with your phone in class. The next time I confiscate it, you won’t get it back. Two, don’t let me find out that you’ve stolen things. If I do, I’ll file a police report. Don’t think that I’ll cover you since you’re my student. As I said, it is okay to be poor, but have some dignity. If you do not have any aspiration to turn over a new leaf, what is the purpose of living?”

If you're poor, you could work. It might be tiring, but every penny that you earn is yours."

Darryl was a disappointment in her eyes.

Darryl wordlessly logged onto the online donation platform.

Daisy jeered at Darryl from the back of the class. "Darryl, how much are you planning to donate? A few bucks?"

"Darryl steals phones for a living," Daphne chimed in. "I'm sure he could do with a few hundred!"

The class burst into laughter again.

"My goodness..."

What followed was a stunned silence from everyone. It was unbelievable! The current highest donor donated five million. It was Darryl Darby from Class Sixteen!

Chapter 279

What?

Everyone was floored when they saw the list. A few girls gasped in amazement.

Five million.

How did this live-in son-in-law donate so much? Where did he get the money from?

Clueless, Katherine asked, “What happened? Why are all of you so stunned?”

“Miss Katherine,” someone replied, “Look at the online donation platform.”

Katherine checked her phone. She trembled.

What? Darryl donated five million? He was the highest contributor out of the entire school!

She was in a daze, staring at Darryl with disbelief.

Circe could not help but look at Darryl as well; her eyes glimmering slightly. If he could donate five million, why would he steal phones? Unless what he said earlier was true?

Among the many who were stunned, the Palmer sisters—Daisy and Daphne—were conflicted. They

were dumbfounded. How could Darryl have donated so much money?

Darryl approached Declan. “Declan, you said I’m poor, so I had to steal phones,” he accused. “Please let me know how many phones would I need to steal to be able to donate this five million?”

Dead silence.

Declan’s face flushed bright red. He could not find the words, but he was not convinced. How did this guy get so much money? He thought for a while. Suddenly, he remembered that Darryl was a live-in son-in-law. He must have spent his wife’s money.

Declan gritted his teeth, took his phone, and donated another five million.

“F*ck! Declan donated another five million!”

Someone blurted.

The class was once again stunned. Many girls looked toward Declan with adoration in their eyes. Declan was such a generous person.

Declan shook his phone in front of Darryl tauntingly. “Darryl, stop pretending,” he snarled. “Don’t think I don’t know that the five million bucks you donated were from your wife! Aren’t you afraid you’ll get a scolding from your wife when you go home? All this just to save your image.”

“I’m different,” Declan flaunted. “My dad gives me my money. I can spend it on whatever I like, whereas you have to rely on a woman. What a loser! Yet, you still pretend that you’re rich.”

At that, the entire class came to their senses. Yes! He was just a live-in son-in-law. Where did he get the money from? It must be from his wife.

Declan sneered outwardly, yet his heart bled. He donated seven million. It was a huge amount! However, the class had their eyes on him, so he could not lose!

Darryl—not noticing his surroundings—smiled at Declan. He said, “If that’s the case, let’s bid.” Darryl donated once more.

Ten million! Everyone’s jaw dropped.

Declan was furious and shocked at the same time. Darryl must have stolen his wife’s money! How could he have added another ten million? Declan was conflicted, having only eighteen million left in his account.

Declan went all out. He looked at Darryl coldly, gritted his teeth, and donated another ten million. His hands trembled when he looked at the amount on his phone.

‘F*ck. The live-in son-in-law can’t possibly top my

donation,' Declan thought.

“Declan is back as the highest donor, with a total of seventeen million! Such generosity!”

Chapter 280

A burst of praise erupted from the class. Many of the girls looked at Declan in utter adoration. To donate close to twenty million without much thought, Declan must have been extraordinarily wealthy.

Declan's image in his classmates' eyes improved once again.

However, some of them did notice the tiny details—Circe especially. She observed Darryl.

She could clearly see that every single time Declan donated the money, his hands trembled. Darryl, on the other hand, remained calm all this while. He could donate tens of millions and still remain poised.

She was more interested in Darryl out of the two of them.

Darryl could not help but laugh. “Declan, are you almost broke?” he mocked.

Declan could barely afford the meal at the Oriental Pearl yesterday. He had just donated seventeen million, so he must not have much left.

Darryl took his phone and donated once more.

There was dead silence once again. Declan swallowed hard. When he saw the ranking list, he was floored.

Twenty million. Darryl donated another twenty million, making his total donation worth thirty-five million.

Everyone wordlessly gawked at Darryl. They could not find any words. Thirty-five million! The highest donor!

“Declan, if you have the money, we can continue this game all day,” Darryl glanced at Declan, chuckling to himself. “The money is for charity, so I don’t mind.”

The entire class heard him loud and clear. All eyes turned to Declan.

“I...” Declan flushed. He stuttered, unable to finish his sentence. He asked for thirty million from his father yesterday for the meal and received an earful for it. If he were to call his father again for money, he would surely be disowned.

Furthermore, he donated seventeen million. It was all of his pocket money for the next six months.

Declan was frustrated and distressed.

Then, Darryl smiled and walked toward Declan. “

Now, tell me. What was the reason that I stole Circe's phone again?" he questioned. "I don't have much money, but I definitely have more than you. I don't mind that you claimed that I stole Circe's phone. For those two punches, however, it's payback time."

"You—" Declan's eyes widened.

SLAP! SLAP!

Darryl slapped Declan so hard that Declan flew to the front of the class, landing on the teaching platform!

It was silence once again in class.

"Darryl!" Katherine yelled. She reprimanded, "How could you hit your classmate!"

It was impressive that Darryl donated a large amount, but it is not right that he became violent towards his classmates.

"Miss Katherine, you saw how he punched me in front of the entire class," he shrugged with a smile. "Does that mean that only he can hit me, but I can't return the favor? Miss Katherine, your bias is showing."

"You—"

Katherine was too furious to continue. Indeed, Declan did punch him twice earlier, but it was a

light punch. Darryl's slaps made Declan fly!

Darryl, see me outside of the classroom," she huffed. "Now!"

No matter what, she had to maintain her image as a stern teacher.

Darryl laughed, following Katherine out of the classroom.

"Darryl, I'm warning you. You are not allowed to hit anyone in Hexad's. Do you hear me?" she threatened.

Darryl nodded. He continued, "Miss Katherine, you saw it happen with your own eyes. I was the victim here. He defamed me. By the way, did you drop two levels today?"

Darryl noticed it the moment Katherine entered the classroom. As described precisely in the Infinite Elixir Manual, Katherine's aura was not as strong as before.

What?

Katherine looked at Darryl in disbelief. "How...how did you know?"

Chapter 281

Katherine did not tell anyone that she dropped by two levels to a Level Four Master General. How did Darryl find out?

“Miss Katherine,” he laughed as he spoke slowly. “Like I said yesterday, the Spirit Petrification Elixir had some issues. Sadly, no one believed me.”

Katherine did not speak, biting down on her lip nervously. Did the Spirit Petrification Elixir truly cause it?

“If I’m not mistaken, you will drop two more levels every day,” he continued. “According to your current level, you’ll become an ordinary being within the week.”

Katherine’s expression darkened. There was fear in her eyes, her lips trembling.

It took her a lot of effort to become a Level One Master Marquis. She even became an Elder of the Xiaoyao sect! Everyone respected her.

If she became an ordinary human being, she would lose everything.

Katherine’s mind blanked out. “Darryl, did you

come up with this lie to frighten me?” she snarled.

She came to her senses. She had heard of the Spirit Petrification Elixir, but she did not believe it has such a terrifying side effect.

Darryl did not offer any other explanation. “If you don’t believe me, there’s nothing I can do,” he shrugged. “I do have a way to stop this, however. Think about it and let me know.” He laughed, returning to the classroom.

He had a solution?

Katherine followed him into the classroom. She could not concentrate on the rest of the lesson. If Darryl was right about losing her level rank, what would she do then?

During class, Circe turned to Darryl as she knocked on his desk. She handed him a note.

‘What? A note?’

Darryl opened the note. “Darryl, I’m sorry I blamed you.” was written clearly.

Darryl scratched his head, wondering how to respond to her note. A simple ‘It’s fine.’ would not suffice. It would make him look like someone with no manners. However, a long sentence would seem like he was rambling.

Darryl’s phone suddenly vibrated. He sneaked a

peek and frowned. There were tens of messages, all from Abby Guy. Yesterday, he had asked Abby whether she was looking for trouble with Dax Sanders. His phone was confiscated at that moment.

Darryl opened the messages. It was all apologies from Abby.

“Master, I will not touch Dax Sanders in the future. Please don’t be mad.”

“Master, I will not repeat the same mistake. Please, I beg you to not be mad.”

The messages were similar.

Darryl frowned as he replied, “Dax Sanders is one of my best brothers. If you were to find trouble with him in the future, you would be an enemy to me. Don’t dream of taking the Godly pill from me. Don’t even think of being my apprentice.”

At the same moment, Circe was slightly impatient. ‘Did he not read my note?’ she thought. She turned around to have a look, but she was left stunned and displeased.

She noticed that her note was opened but placed at the corner of the desk. Darryl was slumped over the table, playing on his phone.

How could he ignore her note? Circe was furious as she began to tremble. She was the adoration of

many men. She even lowered her head to apologize, yet he ignored her! She huffed softly, turning back around.

Darryl's focus was on his phone. Abby beat up his best friend, yet she still called him Master, wanting him to teach her the Art of Elixir. What was he, a three-year-old kid?

Abby—on the other hand—received Darryl's message. She replied anxiously, "Master, I really made a mistake. I promise I will not repeat it."

"We'll see," he snickered.

He kept his phone and forgot about the note. He started paying attention to Katherine, teaching about acupoints within the human body.

...

The Darbys.

Old Master Darby agreed to Abbess Mother Serendipity's request. He agreed to let the Emei sect followers reside in the mansion next to the Darbys. Seeing as the Emei followers were all female, he forbade the Darby's male followers from entering their mansion.

Chapter 282

Abbess Mother Serendipity was meditating at the pavilion in the courtyard. She exuded an ethereal aura in her long white dress.

There was a silhouette at the courtyard door peeking in with an evil smile. It was Florian Darby.

Ever since the gorgeous Emei sect followers moved into the mansion next door, he hoped to have a memorable encounter with them. However, Abbess Mother Serendipity and the others rarely left the mansion. They were mostly in the courtyard.

Florian dared not disobey his grandfather's orders, so he stood by the fence to look in. Suddenly, an idea came to him.

Abbess Mother Serendipity noticed Florian. "Mister Florian," she greeted politely. "May I help you?"

"Abbess Mother Serendipity, sorry to disturb you," he laughed sincerely. "I was thinking... Since the Mid Autumn Festival is approaching in two days, I would like to invite you and the followers to have a meal at our place."

Abbess Mother Serendipity thought about his offer. "That would be asking too much from you," she

replied, blushing in embarrassment.

She had been extremely grateful that the Darbys provided a place for them to live. It would be too much to let them arrange a banquet for them.

‘If the Emei followers attended the banquet, I could get closer to them. Abbess Mother Serendipity, especially, when she’s drunk.’

As long as the Emei followers attended this Mid Autumn Festival banquet, he would have a chance to be closer to them, especially Abbess Mother Serendipity when she’s drunk, Florian thought.

“It’s nothing much!” he chuckled, “Don’t worry.”

“Let me think about it,” she replied.

He giggled excitedly. “Alright! I will wait for your reply!”

Then, he turned around and left.

Back at Hexad’s, the last period for the day was Physical Education. It was a coincidence that Class Seventeen who was right next door had the same class as well.

The students of these two classes were mainly from Donghai City’s wealthiest families.

Lily, Yvonne, and Kent were in Class Seventeen.

Physical Education was more of a free period for the

students to do anything. Some were playing basketball on the court, some were playing on their phones, and some were walking around while chatting with each other.

Darryl was seated under a tree, humming to himself. Then, a petite figure walked towards him. It was Lily.

Lily handed Darryl a bottle of water that she bought specifically for him.

Darryl could feel that Lily was much more gentle toward him these past few days, even caring for him. The guys on the court looked at Darryl enviously, especially the guys from Class Seventeen. Their eyes widened.

Lily was the belle of her class. Why was she in close proximity with another guy from a different class? They were jealous. Was Darryl not the live-in son-in-law who did not touch her once during their three years of marriage? Why were they so close to each other now?

Then, another figure approached them. It was Yvonne Young. She also had a bottle of water in hand, which she passed to Darryl. "Darryl, have some water," she chimed in.

Yvonne seemed even more beautiful since he last saw her. She wore a white shirt with tight, figure-

hugging jeans. She was the center of attention wherever she went.

She sat down next to Darryl and took out a piece of white jade. “Darryl, do you know what sort of jade this is?” she asked.

She had not seen him in a few days, yet he had been on her mind. She knew that they would have the same class today, so she brought the jade with her.

Her father did not know the history behind the white jade either, so she thought of asking him. She also used this as a chance to approach him.

“This is a White Nephrite Jade from Hetian, the most revered type of jade. It is smooth to the touch, its texture extremely delicate.” Darryl looked at the jade in detail.

He continued, “If I guessed correctly, this should be from the palace during the Tang Dynasty.”

The boys on the court were pretending to play basketball, but they were all looking at Darryl.

‘What is happening? Why are two gorgeous girls sitting next to the live-in son-in-law?’

“Do all girls like thieves nowadays?” The Palmer sisters snickered as they walked past them.

Chapter 283

“What thief?” Yvonne asked curiously as she overheard the Palmer sisters’ sneers.

Daisy smiled and said, “Yvonne, didn’t you hear? Darryl stole someone’s handphone yesterday. You’d better stay away from that thief.”

Yvonne smiled, not believing a single word. Darryl stealing phones? This was the funniest thing she ever heard.

He could live comfortably for the rest of his life just by relying on his skill in authenticating antiques and artifacts. Why would he steal phones?

Darryl ignored Daisy, completely engrossed in examining the piece of jade.

“There is a carving of a foreigner playing a musical instrument. If I’m right, this should be from the jade carving of it. This jade is a gem, estimated to be worth roughly around one and a half million or so.”

Lily’s face was filled with admiration as she heard Darryl’s analysis. “Darryl, you’re wonderful!” she cheered.

How did she not know sooner that he knew so much

about antiques?

Yvonne was equally in awe as well. Even her father did not recognize this jade, yet Darryl does. He was amazing! At the same time, Yvonne was slightly disappointed as well, regretting not knowing him earlier.

Suddenly, another bottle appeared, followed by an ice-cold voice that said, "Darryl, drink up."

What was happening today? Why did he keep getting bottles of water?

Darryl was stunned when he looked up. It was Circe!

Everyone's eyes were on them now. What was with Darryl? How did he get so many gorgeous girls to approach him? At first, it was Lily and Yvonne. Now, even the belle of the school, Circe Newman.

"Darryl, I'm so sorry that I blamed you today," she apologized frankly.

She was somewhat panicked. This was the first time she ever gave someone water. Initially, she was quite angry at Darryl for ignoring her note in class, but she decided to apologize to him in person during Physical Education. After all, she thought Darryl was a real thief this morning.

"It's fine," Darryl waved his hand in dismissal. He did add on further.

Circe was still apologetic. “Why not let me buy you a meal after school? You can decide on the place,” she offered.

What? Circe wanted to buy him a meal? The guys were extremely jealous. It was a huge honor to have a meal with Circe, yet this honor was bestowed upon on the live-in son-in-law? The world was unfair.

Lily and Yvonne looked at each other in confusion. What was happening? Why did Circe apologize to him and offered to buy him a meal? Yvonne was curious, but she did not pry further.

Lily, on the other hand, was slightly jealous. Hexad’s most popular girl Circe Newman approached Darryl herself. Of course, she would feel jealous. She did not use to feel this way previously. Perhaps, she was afraid of losing him. Darryl belonged to her. No one could take that away, not even the belle of the school! 1

Lily thought about it for a while and held on to his arm. She said to Darryl sweetly, “Hubby, since your classmate wants to buy us dinner, let’s go!”

Lily added, “Yvonne, come along as well!”

Oof!

Darryl had goosebumps. If he recalled correctly,

this was the first time Lily called him 'Hubby' in three years.

BAM!

Suddenly, a ball flew in Darryl's direction and hit him square on the shoulder.

'Who the f*ck could be that bad at basketball?' thought Darryl. He looked in the direction where the ball came from. He saw a huge man approaching him, looking apologetic. It was Xavier King, Lily's PE teacher.

Chapter 284

Xavier King was a Level Five Master General from the Kunlun sect.

His biggest problem was that he was a pervert. He lusted after women. He noticed Lily and Yvonne on the first day of school and tried getting close to them.

He was unhappy that the two of them were so close with Darryl, so he threw the ball at him without a second thought.

“I’m so sorry, the ball slipped!” Xavier smiled

“It’s fine,” Darryl replied nonchalantly.

Xavier picked up the ball and returned to the court.

Darryl continued his conversation with Circe. “Sure, let’s discuss where to eat after school.”

The belle of the school was buying him a meal. It would be dumb to not accept.

As Circe left, she cheered silently, not showing it outwardly. She maintained her usual ice-cold composure.

Lily hooked her arm around Darryl’s arm as she

asked, “Why is she apologizing to you? Why is she buying you a meal?”

Yvonne was curious as well. After all, Circe was the belle of the school. Plenty of men had tried to court her, but they all failed. However, she approached Darryl personally! At this instant, Lily and Yvonne were now on the same team.

Darryl laughed, but as he was about to reply, a ball flew towards them again. This time, it hit Lily, not Darryl.

Lily cried out in pain. Darryl was fuming with rage as he looked in the direction. He saw that it was Xavier again, clearly doing it on purpose.

Xavier ran up to them, completely ignoring Darryl. “Oh no, I’m so sorry! It must be painful, let me rub it for you,” he smiled.

He was about to touch Lily when Darryl stopped him.

“Apologize to Lily,” Darryl said coldly.

Xavier was enraged. “What did you say?” he frowned.

Darryl replied bluntly, “Are you deaf? I told you to apologize to Lily.”

Their classmates surrounded them, watching the

scene unfold. Was Darryl mad? How dare he speak to a teacher that way?

Kent Hough emerged from the crowd. “Darryl, you are in the wrong,” he declared, “Stop pretending to be all high and mighty. Mister Xavier did not do it on purpose. How dare you ask him to apologize? Who do you think you are? You’re just a mere live-in son-in-law.”

A burst of laughter erupted.

Darryl ignored him. “I’ll say it once more, apologize to her,” he repeated.

Realizing the situation, Lily tugged at Darryl’s sleeve and whispered, “Darryl, it’s fine.”

She knew that Xavier did it on purpose. However, this was The Hexad School. Darryl might be right, but he could never win against a teacher here.

Xavier was seething. With everyone watching them, he could not possibly apologize to a student. His face flushed as he scolded, “B*stard, are you looking for death? Sure!”

Xavier was preparing to throw a punch.

The rest of the students laughed, knowing Darryl was in for a beating. He deserved it!

Lily and Yvonne were anxious. Though Darryl knew

how to fight, he could not win against a PE teacher.

On the other hand, Darryl was calm, laughing to himself. He was sure that if he threw the first punch, Xavier would die terribly.

Just when Xavier's punch was about to hit Darryl, a high pitch shrill came from afar.

“STOP!” It was not booming loud, but it was overtly powerful. A sexy figure approached them, her face filled with rage.

It was Katherine.

“Mister Xavier, how could you bully a student?”
Katherine asked.

Chapter 285

Xavier immediately withdrew his fist. “Oh, Miss Katherine,” he chuckled as he sized her up. Katherine was incredibly charming; her maturity immensely attractive.

Lily let out a sigh of relief under her breath. Thank goodness, Miss Katherine came in time. If not, Darryl would have gotten a beating.

After all, Xavier was a teacher. How could Darryl fight back?

Katherine frowned. “Mister Xavier, what were you all doing?” she asked.

She watched the entire scene unfold.

“Nothing, we were just joking around.” Xavier laughed loudly.

Katherine obviously did not buy any of his words. “I saw everything. Mister Xavier, as a PE teacher, how could you bully your students?” she accused coldly.

Katherine also loathed Xavier. His perverse character was widely known among the Six orthodox sects.

“Miss Katherine, you must be mistaken!” Xavier

bitterly smiled while pretending to be innocent. “How could I bully a student? I was just playing with him. If you don’t believe me, you can ask the other students.”

“Yes, Miss Katherine. You’re mistaken,” Kent interrupted, “Mister Xavier and Darryl were just playing around. Mister Xavier would not hit a student of his.”

Darryl got lucky. He was about to receive a beating, yet Miss Katherine stopped it. Such a pity.

Miles chimed in and added, “Yes, Miss Katherine. They were just joking around. Everyone saw it!”

Darryl smiled wordlessly. These two bastards, lying through their teeth.

Lily and Yvonne looked at each other in discomfort. How could the two of them lie so matter-of-factly?

Seeing that the witnesses were siding with Xavier, Katherine had nothing else to add.

“Darryl, follow me.” She walked to a tree nearby. Darryl followed suit.

Katherine began, “Darryl, as I said this morning, the highest donor will receive a reward. Your contribution was the highest out of everyone in Hexad’s, so naturally, your reward will be the best. The school has notified me that you will be allowed

into the library as a reward.”

What? The library? How was that a reward? Darryl was stunned.

The library was a majestic building, not far from where they were standing. When Hexad’s was established, the most famous building was the library. The impressive library housed countless books covering all topics, including—but not limited to—astronomy, geography, and history. It was open to all students at any time.

What sort of reward was this? Anyone could enter the library even if they did not donate!

Observing Darryl’s expressions, Katherine could read his mind. She laughed and asked seriously, “Were you thinking that the reward was a little sketchy?”

Darryl let out a laugh. Was it not?

Katherine continued, “All students can enter the library, indeed. However, did you know that the library has a basement?”

“A basement?” Darryl asked.

Katherine nodded. “The Hexad School was founded by the Six orthodox sects. They have been in the world of martial arts for thousands of years, and each sect has their own unique skills, including the

Shaolin's Body Transformation Scripture, or the Wudang's Tai chi skills, and even Emei's Nine Yin White Bone Claw. These are all of their secret manuals. A student who can master any of these could easily survive the world of martial arts."

"These manuals are not available for anybody to learn," she added, "They were kept in the library's basement. Since you're the highest donor, Hexad's has allowed you to enter the basement to pick a manual to practice."

Until now, Katherine could not believe that Darryl—the laughing stock of the class—was the highest donor.

Was he not just a live-in son-in-law? Where did he get all the money from?

Darryl was extremely excited. He had previously mastered Grandmaster Heaven's manual, the Ascension of the Nine Dragons, and successfully used it once while killing a shark. It was potent. If he could master another manual, it would be great!

As she looked at Darryl's excitement, she warned, "Darryl, don't be too happy just yet. You need to know that these manuals contain the deepest knowledge of each sect. It will be hard for an ordinary person to learn. You have to understand that even though you have the manual, you might

not master it.”

Chapter 286

Katherine took a long breath before continuing, “The possibility of mastering these manuals are only one in a thousand. So, don’t get your hopes up in mastering these on this occasion.”

How hard could it be?

Darryl frowned. “Miss Katherine, when can I enter?” he asked

“I can bring you there now,” she replied.

“Miss Katherine, please wait here for a while,” Darryl interrupted. He ran back to Circe with an apologetic look on his face.

“Circe, I’m so sorry,” he apologized, “I have something on with Miss Katherine. It looks like I won’t be able to have a meal with you. Can we take a rain check?”

Having a meal with a gorgeous woman was tempting, but who could resist mastering the manuals from one of the Six orthodox sects?

“Okay.” Circe unhappily nodded and replied bluntly. No man has ever rejected her! Darryl was the first.

Half an hour later, Darryl followed Katherine to the

library. The school bell had just rung, so many students had entered as well.

They pushed through the crowd to a secluded corner with painting on the wall. Katherine lifted the picture up to reveal a golden button hidden behind it. She pushed the button, and the wall slowly opened up to a passage of stairs that led all the way down.

“The door has been opened, but I can’t follow you down,” she explained, “You have to do it alone. Remember, you can’t bring the manual out. You can only practice it downstairs. If not, you will be expelled.”

The basement of the school library was a forbidden place. Even the teachers could not enter without approval.

“Yes, Miss Katherine.”

Darryl trod down the steep stairs, about roughly two to three hundred steps. Finally, a chamber appeared before him. The chamber had six adjacent walls, each one representing the Six sects.

There was a platform in the middle of the chamber, but other than that, there were no bookshelves.

‘Where are the manuals?’ Darryl pondered.

Suddenly, countless books flew out of the six walls.

It flew all around the room, making him dizzy.

Ring! Ring!

Darryl's phone rang. He picked it up, it was Katherine. She said, "Darryl, you get to pick one manual. You have to catch it, and remember, you only have one chance! So, make your decision wisely!"

What? He has to grab a manual from mid-air?

Darryl was almost in tears. The manuals were flying at the speed of light, and he could barely make out the writings on their covers.

"Miss Katherine, I can't read the writings on the manuals!" Darryl complained.

This was too random. Picking a manual this way was like buying a lottery ticket—it was based on luck.

Katherine laughed, "Just pick one! You being able to enter the basement is a huge honor. Be grateful! All the manuals are equally great. Just pick one!" Then she hung up.

Darryl took a deep breath. He realized that most of the manuals were worn out in a faded yellow or white shade, except for one manual—which was in red.

That was the one!

He caught the manual immediately with his quick reflexes. The rest of the manuals disappeared the moment he laid his hands on it.

Taking another deep breath, he looked at the manual. On the cover were a few huge words.

Chapter 287

PURE ENERGY SCRIPTURE.

The name seemed powerful! Darryl cheered happily. He impatiently flipped the manual open, reading a few sentences of small words on the first page.

‘The Pure Energy Scripture belongs to the Shaolin sect, created by Bodhidharma. It is a masterpiece of the Internal Energy.’

‘Internal Energy? Was this not about powerful skills?’

Nevertheless, he continued flipping through the book, eventually becoming deeply engrossed in it.

It did not turn out to be any ordinary Internal Energy book. It described in detail that if this skill was mastered, the user’s Internal Energy would become as pure as possible. That meant if one fully mastered the Pure Energy Scripture, they could easily overpower other cultivators of the same rank.

At that, Darryl was ecstatic. He crossed his legs, lowered his energy field, and started cultivating.

The Mid-Autumn Festival arrived two days later. The entire city was in a festive mood, with moon

cakes being sold everywhere.

Many people came out to the park to play. However, Lily was at home, feeling gloomy.

The Longya Streaming Platform—her sole source of income—had shut down. She had no income from not being able to live-stream in a couple of days. To make matters worse, Samantha recently became addicted to mahjong and lost a lot of money. She started off making small bets worth about a few hundred bucks or so, but lately, it had gotten worse. She was losing a couple million bucks a day.

The most Lily could earn in a day was slightly short of ten million, and that money was given to her by Darryl. 3

Having recently bought a mansion, Lily did not have much money on her. She could not afford to pay for Samantha's gambling addiction.

Samantha came downstairs dressed to the nines, lugging the latest Louis Vuitton bag on her arm—clearly prepared for another night of Mahjong.

“Mother, please stop playing mahjong,” Lily pleaded, “If you want to continue, place smaller bets next time. We are not rich.”

Samantha nodded. “Fine, I promise you I will stop.”

She dismissed Lily and took out her phone to chat with her Mahjong friends.

Lily was helpless yet furious. “Mother, don’t brush me off!” she snapped, “You’ve promised me many times, yet you’ve clearly made appointments with your friends for another night of Mahjong!”

Samantha smiled as she was about to reply when the doorbell rang.

‘Darryl came back?’ thought Lily. She stood up and rushed to open the door.

Two days ago, he had something on with Miss Katherine. He had not been back since then and did not answer her calls or messages.

Lily happily opened the door, but her face darkened the moment she saw who it was.

“Grandma?” It was Granny Lyndon, with a walking stick, and William right behind her.

Lily felt conflicted when she saw the two of them.

Since Lily was kicked out of the Lyndon family, she never returned. She did not expect Grandma Lyndon to suddenly turn up at her house.

Granny Lyndon scanned the surroundings as she said, “Lily, I heard that you’ve become rich recently. This mansion is great! What, are you still

angry at Grandma? Are you not going to invite me in?"

Granny Lyndon did not want to come, but she had no choice. The Lyndons were distressed since the Lyndon Enterprise recently faced financial difficulties. William heard that Lily became a famous internet celebrity and earned a substantial amount of money. It would be great if they could get Lily to sponsor some of the cash for the Lyndon Enterprise.

"Grandma, please come in," she nodded.

Granny Lyndon observed the interior decor and nodded. She praised Lily as she took a seat on the sofa. "Lily, the renovation of this mansion is great! It looks like you did a great job on the house. I heard that this is the best mansion in all of Donghai City!"

William nodded in agreement as he said, "Lily, it looks like your livestream career made you a lot of money. Which patron donated the most? Did he invite you out for dinner?"

Lily ignored him. She looked at Granny Lyndon and asked politely, "Grandma, you came here all of a sudden. Did something happen?"

They would not come all this way for no particular reason.

Granny Lyndon smiled bitterly at Lily, sighing as she explained the situation with the Lyndon Enterprise.

When she finished, she looked at Lily with hope in her eyes and said, “Lily, I know I wronged you in the past. I apologize, but the Lyndon family needs help now. You can’t just sit around and do nothing.”

Samatha—who overheard the entire conversation—could no longer hold back. “Can’t just sit around and do nothing?” she sneered, “Previously, when we were kicked out of the Lyndon family, we could barely survive. Who took care of us then?”

Chapter 288

Granny Lyndon looked utterly embarrassed.

“Mother, stop...” Lily pleaded softly.

Lily continued, “Grandma, how would you want me to help you?”

Granny Lyndon and William looked at each other. “Lily, if you give us some money to help the family business overcome this rough patch, we will be grateful,” she smiled.

William added, “Of course, we will give you some of the shares.”

Lily stayed silent in deep thought.

Samantha continued her insults. “What shameless people! Did you forget that some of those shares were hers? You snatched it away from her. Now that you’ve run out of money, you come running to us.”

“Mother, stop it!” Lily snapped, breaking her silence. She glanced at Granny Lyndon and agreed, “Fine, I agree to your terms.”

She still has tens of millions with her. If she kept it any longer, it would be gone due to Samantha’s gambling addiction. She would rather spend it in

exchange for some shares. However, she was determined not to be cheated by them this time.

Granny Lyndon smiled widely and nodded. "That's great! I knew you would not be too cruel. We're still family, after all! We will exchange twenty percent of the shares for thirty million!"

"Fine." Lily nodded.

Granny Lyndon got what she came for, so she stood up and said, "Since tonight is the Mid-Autumn Festival, why don't you two join us for dinner with the rest of the Lyndons?"

Lily laughed and shook her head. "Grandma, I can't join you. I agreed to go shopping at Atlantic Street with my best friend."

Granny Lyndon was stunned, but she responded with a nod and a smile. "That's fine too!"

When they left, Samantha rambled to Lily anxiously, "How naive are you? How could you still believe them? Did you forget that they were the ones that kicked us out?"

When would her daughter ever grow up?

"Mother, I've made my decision," Lily assured.

She changed her outfit and went to Atlantic Street with Jade.

Atlantic Street was Donghai City's longest and busiest street. Every Mid-Autumn Festival, the road would be bustling with people. The whole city would be here.

Almost half the city filled the streets. There were plenty of stalls selling a variety of things. Lily held on to Jade and Phoebe as they walked along the streets. They were having fun—getting food to eat and taking pictures. The view was gorgeous. Lily could not help wonder what Darryl was currently doing.

In the basement of the Hexad School Library, Darryl felt a buzz. Suddenly, his eyes opened wide, feeling the force of a strong aura emitting from his body.

He was now a Level Two Master General!

Darryl let out a long sigh. This Pure Energy Scripture was powerful—the real deal of the Shaolin sect!

He had mastered the entire manual and leveled up. Most importantly, his Internal Energy was purer than ever! He was confident that he could beat other cultivators of the same level without using The Ascension of Nine Dragons.

He exited the library and was shocked to discover that there was no one in the school. Then, he

realized that it was the Mid-Autumn Festival, and it was a school holiday.

His phone buzzed vigorously. Who could it be? He checked his phone and smiled.

It was from many people wishing him a happy Mid-Autumn Festival. The message that stood out was from Paul James of Dragon Tech. It read, ‘Darryl, Happy Mid Autumn Festival! If you want to visit Atlantic Street, just let me know. I’m in charge of that street, so I could take you there in a helicopter.’”

Chapter 289

Of course, Darryl knew that Atlantic Street would be packed to the brim with people. How was it possible that Paul booked the entire street?

Then, his phone rang. It was from Lily.

Lily asked, “Darryl, have you come out of the library?”

Lily was walking on Atlantic Street when she thought of calling Darryl. She did not expect that he would pick up! Darryl laughed, hearing the hustle and bustle of the crowd on Lily’s end. “Yes, where are you?” he responded.

“I’m at Atlantic Street with Jade and Phoebe. It’s crowded here! Come find us!” Lily exclaimed hopefully.

How could Darryl say no? “Okay! Wait for me!” he answered.

Lily hung up the call with her face filled with joy. The fact that she could see Darryl in a short while made her swoon!

The taxi that Darryl hailed had barely reached Atlantic Street when it got stuck in traffic. Darryl

got down and walked into the crowd. There were many stalls; the sellers were shouting to attract customers. Rows of lanterns decorated the entire street.

Darryl admired the view while searching for Lily.

“Come get your fortune predicted! Fortune telling available!”

Megan and Kent were nearby when they heard a fortune-teller yelling. The fortune-teller looked like he was in his forties with a goatee and a Taoist robe. He looked ethereal. A crowd had gathered near him.

“Miss, is your family name Castello?” The fortune-teller smiled and asked Megan.

Megan was amazed at how the fortune-teller could accurately guess her name. She did not know him. How did he know her family name?

“Master, how did you know that my girlfriend’s family name is Castello? That’s amazing. Please do a reading for her!” Kent laughed and told the fortune-teller.

The fortune-teller combed through his goatee as he spoke seriously, “I require a payment for each session.”

“How much?” Kent asked.

“One buck.” The fortune-teller nodded. “One buck is all I need!”

This master must be genuine! He only charged one buck for his predictions! The crowd looked on in amazement.

Kent chuckled as he paid the fortune-teller. “Master, please do a reading for my girlfriend,” he requested.

The fortune-teller nodded. He asked Megan, “Miss, when were you born? Please let me know the time as well.”

Megan replied excitedly, “Sixth of October, three in the afternoon.”

“October six, three in the afternoon...” The fortune-teller closed his eyes and muttered to himself. He calculated with his fingers and said, “Your Day Master Heavenly Stem is gold. Among the five elements, you have an affinity for the water element and are lacking in wood!” ①

Lacking wood?

“What does that mean?” Megan was puzzled.

The fortune-teller smiled and explained, “In your life, you need someone with the water element, yet you stay away from people with the wood element.”

Megan nodded along, unconvinced.

She did not notice that the fortune-teller glanced at Kent when he finished his prediction. Kent raised his eyebrow in response. This fortune-teller was set up by Kent.

The fortune-teller continued, “I could see that recently, things have not been going smoothly for you. At work, things would seem to go well but turn sour at the most critical moment. If I’m not mistaken, you’re a police officer?”

This was way too accurate. Megan shuddered at the thought. It was true, her cases have not been going smoothly, such as the Grandmaster Heaven and the Eternal Life Palace. Getting Darryl to enter prison to get closer to Chester did not work out as well.

Megan was fully convinced of the fortune-teller’s ability. She asked anxiously, “Master, what should I do?”

If he could predict things so accurately, he must have a solution to her problems.

Chapter 290

The fortune-teller thought of a solution. “To break your streak of bad luck is simple,” he explained. “Just pick a good day to get married.”

Marriage?

Megan was stunned, then she came to a realization. She blushed.

The fortune-teller continued, “I just realized that this man next to you has the water element in him. You two are a match! You both are a couple, I assume?”

Megan blushed as she nodded.

The fortune-teller laughed, slapping his thigh. He pretended to calculate with his fingers and exclaimed, “That’s perfect! In the next six months, there will be two good days to have a wedding ceremony. Congratulations to the newlywed couple in advance!”

At that, the fortune-teller let out a sigh of relief under his breath. He completed his mission.

Kent smiled widely. He took the opportunity to fish out a box from his pocket and knelt on one knee. “

Megan, marry me.” He opened the box to reveal a diamond ring. It sparkled under the lanterns.

The crowd exclaimed in admiration. How romantic it was to propose to someone on such a festive day like the Mid Autumn Festival!

Megan bit her lip. She was touched yet shy. She and Kent had a marriage contract in hand. Their marriage was bound to happen in a matter of time, but she did not expect it to happen so suddenly. She was not ready yet.

However, according to the fortune-teller, she had to get married to break her bad luck streak.

Kent reassured her while he was still down on one knee. “Meg, don’t worry. I will treat you well for the rest of my life.”

Kent was nervous. This fortune-teller was actually a staff member from his company. He made him set up a stall here just for this moment. Kent strongly believed that Megan would agree to his proposal since there was a crowd watching.

Megan was about to respond after seeing how sincere Kent was, but she saw someone walking her way. It was Darryl.

“Kent, get up first,” Megan replied, running toward Darryl. He had not given her the Godly pill she

requested the last time they met.

At the same time, Kent sneered, “My, isn’t this the live-in son-in-law? Come here, you rarely get to meet a great fortune-teller. His predictions are highly accurate, so let him give you a reading!”

Kent emphasized the words ‘live-in son-in-law’, winking discreetly at the fortune-teller. He was previously notified about a live-in son-in-law that was too close to Megan. It seemed like he was here in person, so he had to put on his best performance.

Live-in son-in-law? The crowd snickered.

Megan smiled as she walked toward Darryl. “My good brother,” she called, “What a coincidence! About that Godly pill you promised me, do you have it?”

Megan wanted to call him ‘my good younger brother’, but she changed her tone at the thought of the Godly pill.

“Megan, why did you call him that?” Kent asked anxiously.

Bloody hell, how could his fiancé call another man that?

Megan ignored him, completely focused on Darryl.

Darryl started tearing up from laughing. Megan was

a police officer, how could she believe in fortune-telling?

He smiled at Megan while trying to suppress his laughter and said, “I didn’t know that you believe in these sorts of things.”

Fortune-telling was an iffy business. Some fortune-tellers had extremely accurate predictions, but most of them—especially from stalls like these—were scammers.

“Darryl, this master’s reading is accurate,” she muttered. “Why not let him try it out on you?”

If he could guess her surname and her occupation, he must surely be a master!

Chapter 291

Darryl laughed and glanced at the fortune-teller. "I'm not interested."

"No, sir!" The fortune-teller shouted in panic. Kent secretly instructed him to stall Darryl. He grasped onto Darryl's arm and pretended to analyze his palm, "You have a terrible fate awaiting you, buddy."

"Yes, you're right! His life has indeed been difficult!" Kent burst into laughter and yelled, "Everybody! This fortune-teller is really accurate!"

"I am not interested in psychic readings. Let me go." Darryl was exasperated.

The fortune-teller was relentless. "No, buddy. It was fate that we met, so I must take your reading. I can see that you can only live under other's protection as a live-in son-in-law for your whole life."

Hahaha!

'He has to live as a live-in son-in-law for the rest of his life!'"

The surrounding crowd burst into laughter when

they heard those words.

Kent patted Darryl's shoulder and sighed, feigning a pained expression. "Did you hear that? The fortune-teller said that you could only ever amount to a live-in son-in-law. It's destiny. I feel bad for you."

Megan was unable to smile, biting her lips out of sympathy.

'Is Darryl's fate really that pitiful? Even the fortune-teller concluded that he can only be a live-in son-in-law for the rest of his life!'

Darryl smiled as he eyed the fortune-teller. He could see that his mustache was odd, as if it was stuck on to his face.

"Darryl, don't be upset..." Megan whispered.

She completely trusted the fortune-teller's words since his reading was accurate.

Darryl interrupted Megan with a chuckle. "Megan, do you really believe in that? It's all lies and bullsh*t."

'Are all con men these days this brazen?'

Megan panicked after hearing Darryl's words. She tugged on his arm and said in a serious tone, "Darryl, he's legit. He gave me a reading just now,

and it was spot on.”

Kent gave Darryl a sinister smile, unable to suppress his urge to tease him. “Darryl, it’s alright to be upset. You can refuse his words all you want, but how can you doubt him? On what grounds can you say that this fortune-teller is a liar?”

‘Darryl, you *sshole.’ It was a rare opportunity for Kent to be able to embarrass Darryl.

The fortune-teller stroked his mustache and said unhurriedly, “I am destined and gifted with the skills in prophecy, and I never lie. You’re hilarious for accusing me that I’m lying.”

‘Is he still pretending?’

Darryl was amused. “Oh, really?” he replied, “How about you tell us what is Megan’s reading?”

The Geomancy of Yin and Yang consisted of some fortune-telling techniques aside from Feng Shui, so Darryl knew the basics.

The fortune-teller glanced at Megan and said in a calm tone, “This missus over here has the element sign of Metal, which clashes with Wood...”

He shouted suddenly, “Oh, no! Darryl’s element sign is Wood! Miss Castello, you have to keep a distance from him from now on!”

Huh? They had clashing signs? Megan

subconsciously took a step back.

Kent seized the opportunity to walk over and hold Megan's hand. "Meg, did you hear that? Remember to keep a distance from that live-in son-in-law!"

Darryl laughed as he stared at the fortune-teller. "You were right in the first half. Megan's element sign is indeed metal, but you're completely wrong about the latter. Megan's eight-diagram mirror symbol is mountain. My element sign is wood, but my eight-diagram mirror symbol is also mountain."

Darryl could not help but snicker with a hint of disdain in his eyes. "We are both Mountains. Tell me, what's clashing here?"

What? His words were hard to understand! The crowd was astonished.

The fortune-teller froze, cold sweat forming on his forehead. Kent hired him to act as a fortune-teller to deceive Megan.

'Why is the live-in son-in-law so professional?'

Megan's face had shock written all over. "Darryl, you know fortune-telling too?"

She knew that Darryl was knowledgeable about Feng Shui and antiques, but how did he know fortune-telling?

The man was full of surprises.

Darryl maintained a slight smile. “Just a little.”

Kent was in a complete panic. Since he was about to propose to Megan, he could not let Darryl destroy his plan!

He glanced at the fortune-teller, signaling him to act.

The fortune-teller continued hurriedly, “Mister Darby, I also read that you have terrible luck. Whoever gets close to you will definitely be unlucky. Your wife and friends will be struck with misfortune.”

“What did you say?” The smile on Darryl’s face disappeared, and his tone turned icy-cold.

He crossed the line.

“You...”

The fortune-teller’s voice was quivering, feeling intimidated by Darryl’s gaze.

“I’m saying that you are unfortunate—”

“How about I give you a prediction too?” Darryl spat, interrupting him. “A catastrophe awaits you today.”

A catastrophe?

The fortune-teller froze and stared at him blankly. “

What catastrophe?”

Chapter 292

Smack!

Darryl smacked the fortune-teller's face hard.

“F*ck!”

The fortune-teller cried out as he spun around from the impact. He fell onto the ground in a daze as blood poured from his nose.

“You...”

He pointed his finger at Darryl in anger and fear after recovering from the shock.

“Darryl, what are you doing?” Kent shouted, “Why did you hit him? Don't you have manners?”

Megan was also panicking. “Darryl, why did you do that? His words weren't good to hear, but he is a well-respected man. You are not treating him with respect by hitting him like that.”

“Exactly!”

The crowd agreed and started criticizing Darryl.

“Lad, you shouldn't have beaten a man of Taoism even if you are young and strong.”

“Exactly...”

Darryl ignored everyone and walked to the fortune-teller with a sinister smile. He grabbed onto his mustache and lifted him.

Rip!

Darryl forcefully pulled on the mustache, tearing it off the wailing fortune-teller.

“See, his mustache was just stuck on.”

Darryl tossed the mustache to the ground and looked around.

The fortune-teller was nervous. “Sir, this is too much. Can’t I have a fake mustache?”

“Is there a rule that fortune-tellers cannot have fake mustaches?”

“He just can’t let this go, can’t he?”

Darryl maintained a cold smile and tore the fortune-teller’s clothes wordlessly.

Tear!

The robe was torn off, and his clothing inside was revealed. The crowd laughed when they saw what he wore on the inside.

What a vogue fortune-teller! He wore a Nike jacket and a pair of Adidas track pants.

Haha! How fashionable!

It was their first time to see such a scene. The crowd burst into laughter. Everyone could see that the fortune-teller was fake.

“You...”

The fortune-teller’s face was flushed red as his sweat dripped along with his blood. It was embarrassing. He pointed his finger at Darryl, but he could not utter a word.

Megan stomped her foot in frustration. She was enraged and ashamed at the same time.

‘He is a con man!’ she screamed in her mind. She could not believe that she trusted his words.

“How dare you lie to me in public?! Don’t you know who am I?” Megan reprimanded as she took out her phone. She was about to call her colleagues for backup.

Megan hated liars the most. It was grave that he had lied to her!

The man was terrified and desperately begged Kent. “Young Master Hough, please help me! I don’t want to get locked up.”

‘What the f*ck? This guy is stupid and unreliable as f*ck! He gave my name out almost immediately!’

Kent became furious, kicking him harshly. “F*ck

you! Do I know you?!”

‘This good-for-nothing is going to drag me into this sh*t just because he didn’t do his job!’

Megan called twice, but no one picked up.

Her colleagues in the station were on-duty to maintain public order since it was the Mid-Autumn Festival.

“I’m going to let you off today. I’m not going to be this merciful if you do this again.” Megan raged, utterly furious that she could not contact her colleagues. “Get out of here.”

The man nodded and scurried away, leaving his booth behind.

The crowd scattered away when the scene was over.

Megan walked to Darryl awkwardly. She bit her lip and whispered, “I’m sorry. I didn’t know that he was a fake.”

Megan wanted to dig a hole and hide in it. How could she, the Criminal Investigation Team Leader, fall for a con man’s words?

How embarrassing.

Chapter 293

Darryl smiled at Megan. “Be more alert next time. Most fortune-tellers out there are fake.”

Megan nodded and continued softly, “By the way, do you have any Godly pills with you now?”

She could never forget that!

Darryl shook his head. “I don’t have any. Maybe next time.”

He had just returned from the library. He had no time to go home, which was where he kept the pills.

Disappointment flashed across Megan’s face as she nodded. “Alright then, I’ll contact you again. Can you bring some Godly pills with you next time?”

Darryl nodded and bid farewell to her. He had to look for Lily.

Megan grabbed her bag and walked in the opposite direction.

“Meg, wait for me!” Kent shouted in panic, chasing after her.

Megan was furious. She remembered that the fake fortune-teller shouted Kent’s name in his panic

when she was about to arrest him. She knew that all of it was Kent's doing.

She was disappointed.

He had once asked someone to act like a shark, and now he found someone to act as a fortune-teller. What a piece of trash!

Darryl walked around for ten minutes, but Lily was nowhere to be seen.

Atlantic Street was bustling with people. There were many sweet couples there.

Darryl realized he never did anything romantic for Lily throughout their three years of marriage. 'What if I do something romantic today to surprise her?'

He chuckled and sent a text to Paul.

Hmm?

Darryl stopped abruptly after sending the text.

The rows of decorative lanterns at the roadside were gleaming with brilliance.

The word 'Lily' appeared on the lanterns every few seconds.

'What is going on? Why do the lanterns have her name on them?' Darryl muttered to himself and

raised his gaze to see Lily, Jade, and Phoebe from a distance!

‘Found her!’ Darryl passed through the crowd before he realized there were two men behind Lily.

‘Justin Quinn and Zayler White?’

Zayler was the eldest grandson in the White family. He was merely an acquaintance of Darryl’s.

On the other hand, Justin was an ‘old friend’ of his.

He acted friendly and tried to flirt with Lily in front of everyone during their outing.

Darryl even mocked his name previously, calling him a ‘queen.’ Haha, Darryl wanted to laugh whenever he thought about that memory.

Justin was in a great mood that night. He came to Atlantic Street with Zayler to walk around and ogle at pretty girls.

They coincidentally met Lily and the girls, following them since then. Lily was the girl of his dreams, after all!

Lily was exasperated by Justin’s lack of shame. However, she could not do anything about it. She could not just ask him to leave as they were there for a walk.

“Lily, look! It’s your name. They’re carved on the

lanterns,” Phoebe exclaimed in wonder.

Lily and Jade looked in the direction where Phoebe pointed, and they were stunned.

Lily’s name appeared on the rows of jack-o-lanterns every two seconds with different fonts. The writing clearly took a lot of effort.

Justin walked towards them with a smile. “Miss Lily, do you like it?”

Justin racked his brains to think of a surprise for Lily. He made sure that Dragon Tech rented out the entire Atlantic Street for the Mid-Autumn Festival.

The Quinn family had an ongoing cooperation with Dragon Tech.

Justin used his position as a partner to ask the employees of Dragon Tech to write Lily’s name on the lanterns. There were more than 200,000 lanterns with Lily’s name throughout Atlantic Street. It was a grand scene!

Girls would definitely fall for this, especially a pretty one like Lily!

‘Haha, I am so smart!’ Justin’s face was filled with satisfaction.

Lily turned to Justin in astonishment, a ripple of emotions spreading throughout her. “You did this?”

Chapter 294

Lily honestly thought that Darryl surprised her with the lanterns that had her name on them. Her guess was rebutted almost immediately. It was a huge project. Darryl would never put in the effort to do this.

“Look, the lanterns have words on them!”
Somebody called out.

The crowd clamored. How romantic! They wondered who was the lucky girl!

“It’d be great if someone wrote my name on those ...” Some girls were envious.

Phoebe walked to Lily and held her hand, “Lily, you’re really lucky!”

Lily smiled and nodded to Justin. Although she did not have an interest in him, she was touched. She could sense that Justin was willing to put in the effort for her.

Beaming with happiness, Justin smiled. “I’m willing to do anything to see you smile.”

He could see that Lily was touched. That was a good sign to ask her out!

Lily smiled and took out her phone to take a photo when she noticed a familiar figure walking toward her.

She was elated and surprised! “Darryl!” Lily ran toward him with a cry of surprise.

At the same time, Jade was shocked and became nervous. She stuttered, “Da...Darryl...”

She was used to calling him ‘Daddy,’ but she could not use that nickname in front of so many people. It would be embarrassing. Sensing Jade’s awkwardness, Darryl smiled and nodded to her in acknowledgment.

Justin clenched his fists in anger. Damn it, the live-in son-in-law appeared during the most crucial moment as he was about to get close to Lily.

‘Why is he here? Isn’t he in the library?’

Lily smiled and asked Darryl, “What took you so long?”

It had been over half an hour since their call.

Darryl smiled bitterly, “There are too many people here.”

His gaze fell on Justin as he snickered, “Justin Quinn, you really are shameless to flirt with someone’s wife in public.”

'F*ck, he's flirting with my wife, and he even spent a huge amount of money on her!'

He had been bugging Lily throughout their outing. The lanterns with Lily's name were all part of Justin's plan.

Justin's expression changed instantly. He was about to speak when Jade interrupted, "Darryl, what are you talking about? Mister Quinn planned for a surprise for Lily and nothing else. How could you talk to him like that? How dare you act arrogant when you're just leeching off Lily?"

"Jade, stop..." Lily whispered as her smile disappeared.

"Darryl, did you hear what the pretty lady said?" Justin scoffed, "I'm giving Miss Lily a surprise. What are you going to do about it? You're just her husband legally, but you're not spouses in reality, am I right? I admit that I like Lily, and I'm going after her. Do you have a problem with that?"

Justin looked at the rows of lanterns and continued, "I see, you are upset that I'm being romantic. Darryl, to be frank, what did you provide to Lily after being married for three years? You must be angry that I gave her a surprise."

Many passersby stopped to look at Darryl. People

were nosy and attracted to drama.

Darryl laughed and stared at Justin. “Justin Quinn, you are true to your name; you are as arrogant as a queen. How dare you speak so blatantly when you’re interested in my wife?”

Darryl paused to look at the rows of lanterns and continued, “Where did you get your superiority complex from? It’s just a small trick.”

Justin was taken aback before he burst into laughter, “Haha, you are right. Darryl, I do feel superior, so what? All the writings on the lanterns throughout the whole street were done by me, how about that? Do you have the ability to do that?”

The crowd laughed in approval. Everyone could see that the guy’s wife was getting chased by an admirer who put in a considerable effort to write her name onto a few hundred thousand lanterns!

Poor guy.

Chapter 295

Justin became more agitated as he talked. He took out his phone as he snickered, “Darryl, you’re here just in time. I’ll show you what I can really do. Wait, the lanterns will show Miss Lily’s full name very soon.”

He was even more pleased when he said, “They will not only show Miss Lily’s name, it will show mine too.”

The nosy crowd exclaimed in surprise.

‘Isn’t that a little too much? How is he able to show their names on all these lanterns? That guy’s indeed powerful!’

Even Jade could not help but mutter, “Lily, Mister Quinn is such a romantic. He’s so much better than Darryl.”

Jade was still baffled why Lily cared about that piece of trash so much. Justin Quinn was so much better! He was rich, and he was a romantic. 2

Ignoring her, Lily held Darryl’s hand and said softly, “Darryl, let’s just go.”

Since Justin could make the whole street light up

with her name, he could make both their names appear.

Lily wanted to leave as soon as she could to avoid the scene instead of staying there to embarrass Darryl even more.

Darryl remained unmoved. He smiled and said, “Honey, it’s fine. Let’s see what else he can do.”

Lily was panicking. Darryl’s insistence on staying there was going to backfire on him.

The crowd grew; people were enjoying the drama. A rich young man was competing with a live-in son-in-law for a woman. It was such a dramatic scene. It was much more interesting than taking a stroll along the street.

Justin made a call to arrange the lanterns to show both their names, but no one picked up.

Darryl asked with a smile, “What’s the matter? It’s been some time. Why are the writings still the same?”

“Hush, can’t you see that I’m making a call?” Justin shushed him in a mocking tone.

Darryl nodded. “Okay, I’ll try to make a call as well.”

He took out his phone and called Paul, and he answered within seconds.

“Switch off all the lanterns on the street,” said Darryl to the phone.

Swish!

All the festive lanterns were off in an instant. Atlantic Street fell into darkness in a blink of an eye!

What?

Did he turn all the lights on Atlantic Street off with just one phone call? Jade was speechless!

What just happened? Who did Darryl call?!

“Justin Quinn, where is your romantic gesture? Has it been turned off too?” Darryl smiled.

“You...” Sweat was pouring from Justin’s forehead.

F*ck, what was happening? He called Dragon Tech numerous times, but no one picked up!

“Look, helicopters!” someone shouted.

End everyone looked up into the sky, and their mouths gaped open with awe!

Three helicopters were flying toward the street from a distance with a gigantic object hanging below them. As the helicopters descended, the object was clearly presented in front of everyone.

It was a piano!

Gasp!

Everyone was stunned, and no one uttered a word! Someone used three helicopters to transport a piano over?! Who did this? It must have cost a fortune!

Many of them threw their gaze at Justin and Darryl amid the shock.

One of them managed to control the lanterns' writings, and another arranged to switch off all the lights on the street!

This grandiose scheme must have been arranged by one of them!

Justin stared at the piano blankly and fell into a daze.

'Was this... arranged by the live-in son-in-law?'

Some of them turned to Darryl with astonishment.

Darryl took Lily's hand and kissed it lightly before walking straight toward the piano.

Indeed, he called Paul to arrange for a band so that he could serenade Lily. Her heart was thumping like crazy.

The crew placed some chairs in front of the piano.

Chapter 296

It was complete silence!

The street became exceptionally quiet as everyone fixed their gazes on Darryl.

Lily stood there mystified with her heart almost jumping out of her chest.

‘Is Darryl... going to perform for me on the spot? He never mentioned that he knew how to play the piano ...’

Darryl walked to the piano and took a seat. He stretched his fingers and gently placed them on the piano keys.

Learning the piano was one of the compulsory skills in the Darby family. He learned to play the piano for two years with a world-famous pianist Baker when he was still with his family.

However, it had been three or four years since the last time he practiced.

A crew emerged from the crowd with a microphone when Darryl was seated and he placed it in front of Darryl.

Four stylish men walked over and stood behind

Darryl, each carrying a guitar.

Wow.

The crowd was boiling with enthusiasm at that instant.

The four guitarists were not just anyone, they were the most popular rock band, FBY!

Did he really hire FBY to foil his performance?

Many young girls were screaming and beaming with excitement.

The crowd took out their phones to film Darryl.

Darryl smiled as he looked around before finally settling his gaze on Lily. He said, "Honey, it has been three years since we got married but I haven't got to do anything romantic to you."

"Everyone criticized me saying that I'm a live-in son-in-law and treated me with disdain throughout these three years."

"They have been mocking you for getting married to a piece of trash but none of them thought that you suffered a lot too. I'm sorry."

"We have let each other down in the past, but we will not relive that in our future days."

Wow!

Lily became the spotlight when the crowd shifted their gazes to her.

Lily's tears were welling up as she stared at Darryl without blinking.

Finally, Darryl placed his fingers on the piano gently and started playing.

Darryl smiled and fixed his gaze on Lily as he sang, "I could not forget your charming eyes when we first met..."

"Your figure haunted my mind..."

"Feeling your grace while holding your hands, I could not breathe. I want to appreciate your innocence, I want to share your sadness when you are upset."

Darryl's voice was gentle yet magnetic. It was as if a singer was actually there.

The girls in the crowd screamed!

Lily covered her mouth in awe as her tears poured down uncontrollably!

Overwhelmed with excitement and emotions, Lily was unable to speak. She felt as if she was the happiest woman in the world.

The song ended. Darryl stared at Lily with a gentle

smile as he opened his arms slowly.

“Honey!”

Lily’s tears streamed as she ran into Darryl’s arms without hesitation!

“Bravo!”

Someone started clapping, leading to thunderous applause!

Darryl hugged Lily tight. It was their first hug in three years.

Snap.

Darryl raised an arm and snapped his finger.

Explosive noises filled up the sky!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The crowd looked up to the sky to see streamers which exploded into fireworks in the sky!

“How beautiful!”

The girls were beaming with emotion as they screamed while pointing at the sky.

The sky was filled with bright and colorful lights which illuminated a huge part of the city as if there was meteor rain!

Two names appeared in the sky when the biggest

fireworks exploded.

Darryl Darby, Lily Lyndon!

A striking red heart was lit between both names!

Wow...

The passersby exclaimed one after another. Lily was at a loss for words. She held Darryl tightly and asked in a quivering voice, “Honey, is this real? Am I dreaming?”

Her teardrops fell one after another. She was overwhelmed with emotions.

Darryl smiled as he stared at her, “Do you like the surprise?”

‘Did Paul bought off every single firework in the city?’

Lily was overwhelmed with happiness as she nodded. She rested her face on Darryl’s chest, “Yes, I love it...”

Chapter 297

The Young family's house, Donghai City.

Yvonne who just had dinner with her family stood in front of the window by herself.

She was uneasy because of her lack of Darryl's information in the past two days.

'What is wrong with me? Why am I thinking about him every night although I'm well aware that he's in love with Lily Lyndon?'

She thought of how he helped her in evaluating valuables in Pearl Pavillion.

She also thought of him courageously rescuing her from the shark during their outing.

Then, she thought of his dauntless bravery while fighting off robbers.

Those scenes were imprinted in Yvonne's mind as if they were stamped.

Explosive noises were heard as fireworks blossomed in the sky in Atlantic Street's direction. The colorful lights lit up the sky in an instant.

How beautiful.

The fireworks grabbed Yvonne's attention.

Two names appeared in midst of the fireworks.
Yvonne was stunned as she read them.

They were Darryl and Lily's names.

'Are they at Atlantic Street now?'

What a grand firework show.

He seemed like he really loved her...

Yvonne felt an unfathomable bad feeling.

Atlantic Street.

Darryl and Lily were still locked in an embrace.

Everyone was fixing their gazes on them. Some were envious and some were wishing them happiness.

"Kiss!"

Someone shouted.

Countless voices chanted along the next moment.

"Exactly, kiss!"

"Come on, kiss! Haha!"

Lily's face was flushed with embarrassment from the chanting but she felt immense joy internally.

It was embarrassing because the crowd was huge.

Darryl smiled as he stared at Lily before he moved closer to kiss her rosy lips.

Buzz.

Lily's body quivered as her legs gave way instantly and she slumped into Darryl's arms.

“Bravo!”

The crowd applauded and laughed, many were recording the scene with their phones when a commotion was heard nearby.

“Run!”

Someone shouted in the crowd and everyone started scurrying around!

More than 30 men in black clothing were dashing over from a distance with daggers!

The person leading the troop was a middle-aged man named Timothy Dixon, Donoghue's father. He was the head of the Dixon family!

Donoghue barely survived after getting beaten up by Darryl after getting rescued in the hospital for three days straight.

Timothy was furious when he got to know that his son was almost killed. He swore to take revenge for his son! He would get Darryl that day and he must

die!

“Finish him!” bellowed Timothy, his eyes red with fury!

The 30 men charged toward Darryl in no time!

Darryl clenched his fists tight. He could tell that those were the Dixon family’s men.

Timothy looked extremely similar to Donoghue Dixon, he was clearly his father.

Darryl had no way to run as Atlantic Street was filled with visitors, he could only face them!

Darryl grabbed a guitar and charged!

Lily was anxious and she wanted to help, but Jade stopped her in time.

“Those are bad men, you will not be of great help. How about we call the cops?” asked Jade anxiously as she took out her phone to call the police.

However, no one picked up the phone.

The policemen were out in force to maintain public order instead of staying in because it was the Mid-Autumn Festival.

Jade understood what happened when her call was not picked up. She called out to Phoebe who was still in a daze, “Let’s go and look for the cops near

the intersection. Hurry!”

Darryl was engaged in a fight with the men within a few seconds.

Thump... Thump...

Darryl’s Internal Energy was a lot more refined than before ever since he practiced the Pure Energy Scripture. He knocked out the few men who were charging toward him effortlessly in the blink of an eye.

However, the men Timothy brought with him were the elites of the Dixon family who were remarkably strong. The few men who were knocked out rested to catch their breath before leaping back up and charged toward Darryl again.

Kick!

Darryl dodged a dagger and gave the man a kick on his stomach!

Chapter 298

All the 30 men were cultivators! The strongest of them was a Level Five Master whereas the weakest was Level Three!

Darryl was getting exhausted after some time. He would deplete his energy fully if this went on any longer!

“Kill him, kill him!”

Timothy was shouting his lungs out when he lunged at Darryl unexpectedly and thrust a dagger into Darryl’s back!

Slash!

Fresh blood was gushing out of his wound!

“Darryl!”

Lily saw what happened and got extremely worried, she could feel her heart at her throat. Anxiety was written all over her face.

Darryl was slightly distracted because of Lily’s shout, Timothy smiled sinisterly and raised his dagger for another strike in that split second!

He was aiming toward Darryl’s heart!

“Look out!”

Lily could not help but exclaimed when she noticed, she ran to Darryl and hugged him without thinking!

Stab!

The dagger was embedded into Lily’s back forcefully and blood spurted from the wound!

“Lilybud!” Darryl held Lily and shouted as if he lost his mind!

Blood drained from Lily’s face as she limped onto the floor.

Blood was oozing out of her back uncontrollably and she was in great pain.

However, she did not regret her action.

Darryl had been putting so much effort into her.

She could finally help him for once.

‘What?’

“Lilybud, don’t scare me, stop scaring me!” Darryl roared and broke down completely!

‘Why are you so stupid?’

‘You don’t even cultivate, why did you take the dagger for me? Why?’

“Stop scaring me...” Darryl shook Lily’s body

lightly as he choked with his sobs.

Lily's face was as pale as paper. The wound was a deep one. Lily could feel her body getting lighter and lighter.

She forced a smile as she could hear Darryl's shouts, "Honey, I'm fine. Don't cry, you look...ugly when you cry..."

"Shush, wait for me. I'm taking you to the hospital." Darryl's tears started pouring uncontrollably!

Timothy gave a sinister smile, "The hospital? Hehe, kiddo, no way. I can send both of you to hell though!"

The 30 men charged toward them!

Darryl let go of Lily and turned slowly, his eyes crimson with rage!

"All of you f*ckers, have to die today!"

Roar!

A golden ray appeared and formed into nine ferocious dragons swirling around Darryl!

"Die! All of you f*ckers have to die!" shouted Darryl in a hoarse voice, the air surrounding him was getting twisted!

"Ascension of the Nine Dragons!"

Boom!

The nine dragons flew toward the men brutally as Darryl shouted!

“Ah!”

Horrifying screams erupted from the 30 men!

It took less than 20 seconds for those men to collapse onto puddles of blood!

Timothy was the only one left. He covered his chest as he stood there with a terrorized expression!

Puke!

Fresh blood spurted from his mouth. He made a huge effort to block the skill and he did, but he also suffered grave injuries!

‘How is this possible?’

How could a Level One Master defeat all 30 elite men of the Dixon family?

“Kiddo, you’re lucky today. You wait for me!” shouted Timothy before turning to flee.

‘Something is clearly wrong with the kid, I should go back first to think of another way to get rid of him.’

Phew...

Darryl held the Blood-Drinking Sword as he gasped for air.

“Honey, hold on, stay with me...”

Darryl carried Lily in his arms as he walked out of Atlantic Street full of anxiety and pain.

“I don’t think that I can hold on much longer. Honey, I love you. I love you...” A tear fell from Lily’s face as her vision was getting blurry.

“Don’t, honey, stop talking. You cannot die!”

Darryl trembled as he ran from Atlantic Street like a mad man.

His arms were stained red from her blood. The vitality on her face disappeared bit by bit and her lips were completely pale when she finally closed her eyes.

Chapter 299

At the same time, Darby Seaview Mansion was exceptionally lively.

A dozen tables were arranged in the hall as all the offspring of the Darby family were present for the reunion dinner.

Abbess Mother Serendipity was at the seat for honored guests with a dozen pretty Emei female disciples around her.

They were a unique scene in the Darby reunion dinner.

Old Master Darby was seated on the main seat when he said emotionally, “Is everyone here? Alright. Today is my first Mid-Autumn Festival after I ended my isolation to cultivate. I am glad to see the Darby family growing and prospering.”

He looked toward Abbess Mother Serendipity and smiled, “Aside from that, we have Abbess Mother Serendipity from the Emei sect with us today for the Darby family’s Mid-Autumn Festival reunion dinner. We are honored to have you here!”

The Darby offspring nodded in agreement.

Abbess Mother Serendipity nodded lightly and said

humbly, “Old Master Darby, don’t mention it. We are grateful for your kindness in letting us stay in your home. You even invited us to join you for dinner this Mid Autumn Festival. The honor is ours.”

She did not intend anything with those words but the others were caught up with something.

A hint of awkwardness spread through the Darbys.

Even Old Master Darby was uneasy. After all, he was the one who led the family to enter the Eternal Life Palace Sect.

She mentioned that the Eternal Life Palace Sect was a cult with demonic roots, was she mocking the Darby family too?

Old Master Darby could not rebut so he coughed awkwardly and smiled dryly, “Indeed, cough... Abbess Mother Serendipity, you’re right.”

He was anxious.

He could not continue the topic anymore or he might say something wrong and expose themselves.

Abbess Mother Serendipity spoke again, “By the way, Mister Darby, the Darby family certainly has wide connections since you are one of the wealthiest families in Donghai City. I have something to ask here, do you know a Darryl

Darby?”

Darryl Darby?

Everyone’s expression changed into bewilderment when they heard the name.

‘How did Abbess Mother Serendipity know about the good-for-nothing Darryl?’

Florian stood up with a smile, “Abbess Mother Serendipity, are you close with Darryl?”

She shook her head and said, “Not really, we’ve never met. The eldest of our young disciples in the Emei sect named Megan Castello informed me a few days ago that Darryl Darby from Donghai City has Godly pills, hence I’m asking about him.”

What?

‘Darryl has Godly pills?’

Haha...

Laughter erupted in the mansion hall upon Abbess Mother Serendipity’s words, humor, and disdain were written all over the Darby family’s faces.

A disciple snickered and said, “Abbess Mother Serendipity, you might not know this but Darryl is indeed from our family. He is the second young master.”

Abbess Mother Serendipity’s face gleamed with

delight, “Is that so?”

The disciple laughed and continued in a scornful tone, “However, he violated a family rule and he was chased out of the family. He is now a live-in son-in-law and we have nothing to do with him. How can a piece of trash like him have Godly pills?”

“Exactly. He is a loser, how can he possess such rare medicine?”

“Abbess Mother Serendipity, you must have mistaken him for someone else.”

“Right...”

Listening to the Darby family’s conversation, Abbess Mother Serendipity raised her thin brow as confusion emerged on her delicate face.

Something was off.

Darryl Darby sounded worthless from the Darby family’s words.

However, Megan said that Darryl was an amazing individual as if he knew everything.

How could this happen?

Florian added, “Abbess Mother Serendipity, Darryl is the black sheep of the Darby family, he is a monster! He tarnished my brother’s bride on their wedding night! How wicked is that?”

He was trying to impress Abbess Mother Serendipity and he lost control of his mouth.

Old Master Darby coughed and glared at Florian, gesturing him to stop as one must not air their dirty linen in public! How could he tell outsiders about a member of their family tarnishing his brother's wife?

How could the Darby family sustain their reputation after this?

“What?”

Chapter 300

Abbess Mother Serendipity's expression changed drastically upon hearing Florian's words.

Tarnishing a brother's wife was a huge condemnation in their society!

The Emei disciples around her furrowed their brows in disapproval.

Slam!

Abbess Mother Serendipity's face turned cold as she slammed the table and said angrily, "I didn't expect Darryl Darby to be such a shameless man. I will make him pay if I meet that hooligan one day for the Darby family's sake."

She looked gentle and humble but she could never accept a transgression like this!

....

The next day.

Donghai City was still immersed in a joyous holiday mood although the Mid-Autumn Festival was over.

It was a sunny day. The streets near Hexad School were lively and bustling with people.

The students were walking to the academic

buildings respectively as classes were going to start soon.

Katherine Keith walked out of the teacher's office with a frown.

She noticed that she dropped two Levels after waking up in the morning.

She had a total of six Level drops since two days ago.

She downgraded from a Level One Martial Marquis into a Level Four Master.

Even some of her students were stronger than her.

How could this happen?

Katherine thought of Darryl in her frustration.

He mentioned that she would drop two levels every single day until she became an ordinary person. Should she trust him?

To be honest, Katherine already started to believe his words that there was something off about the medicine!

She should have listened to him and refuse to take the medicine but there was no use crying over spilled milk.

However...

Darryl also mentioned that he had ways to solve her

downgrading issue!

Katherine had a glimmer of hope when she thought about that. She then trotted toward the academic building in her heels.

She was stunned when she reached the classroom, disappointment was written all over her face.

The class was crowded but Darryl was not there. Dax, however, was present.

“Good morning, miss!”

The students greeted Katherine while sitting straight. She earned their fear after a few days of interaction.

Katherine nodded in acknowledgment and asked, “Dax, why is Darryl absent?”

Dax shrugged and shook his head, “I don’t know.”

He did not contact Darryl because he was in the hospital for the past few days.

Miles stood up suddenly and said with a chuckle, “Miss, he must be grounded at home!”

He just had to get himself involved whenever people talk about Darryl.

Declan also stood up and asked, “Miles, how do you know?”

The duo's interaction was entertaining the whole class.

Miles chuckled, "Do you really have to ask? He made a huge donation using his wife's money, all for his own image. What else could he be doing?"

He then squat down and acted, "He might be busy doing laundry at home."

Hahahaha!

Laughter erupted in the class.

Dax could not suppress his anger anymore. He stood up abruptly and glared at Miles, "Hey, *sshole. Do you want to fight? Just say it."

He could not bear to listen to his friend getting mocked when he was absent from class.

Also, Miles was a d*ck. He deserved a lesson.

A hint of panic flashed past Miles's face but he continued, "I didn't say anything wrong. I'm just humoring the class by teasing Darryl, is there a problem with that?"

Dax beat up Kent Hough from the next class on the first day of school.

His violent tendencies were not a joke. Miles could not afford to offend him.

Miles sat down after that, he dared not talk any further, his fear clearly visible on his face.

Katherine sighed. 'Is that it? Is Darryl really doing housework as punishment because he made a donation of 20 million using his wife's money?'